



THE
SPANISH VERB

PETER E. TRAUB

PC
4271
TB
1900
c. 1
ROBA





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE
SPANISH VERB

WITH AN INTRODUCTION ON

SPANISH PRONUNCIATION

BY

1ST LIEUT. PETER E. TRAUB, 1ST U. S. CAVALRY

ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF FRENCH AT THE U. S. MILITARY ACADEMY

UNDER THE DIRECTION OF

PROFESSOR E. E. WOOD

DEPARTMENT OF MODERN LANGUAGES, U. S. M. A.



NEW YORK :- CINCINNATI :- CHICAGO
AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1900, BY

P. E. TRAUB

THE SPANISH VERB

E-P 1



PREFACE

OWING to the acquisition of our new territory in the Atlantic and Pacific as the result of the Hispano-American War of 1898, an intimate knowledge of the Spanish language has suddenly become of great military, naval, industrial, and commercial importance. The Pronunciation and the Verb are the prime factors of this knowledge, since without them the intelligent expression of thought would be impossible.

The necessity for writing this book lies in the fact that there is no treatise on the Spanish verb in existence, and no satisfactory work on Spanish pronunciation.

This book embodies the results of the corresponding portion of the system in vogue at the United States Military Academy, whereby a thorough knowledge of the essentials of Spanish is imparted to the cadet in the short period of three months.

The portion treating of pronunciation is in accordance with the latest teaching of the Spanish Academy, and takes into account the peculiarities attending the Spanish-American speech as found to-day in our Island possessions. The system followed in the verb is that of constant repetition, every verb being fully written out, even the English translation in each case. Experience in teaching convinces nearly all instructors that constant and unabridged repetition, not only for the ear but also for the eye, is the only correct way to teach a language, and more especially the verbs of a language.

A constant reference was of course necessary to the Grammar of the Spanish Academy, the foundation of all works on this language published here and abroad.

I wish to tender my grateful acknowledgments to Professor E. E. Wood, Department of Modern Languages, U. S. M. A., for nearly everything of value and originality in this book, both in the material and in the arrangement. The explanation of the reflexive substitute for the passive, the lucid method of writing out the imperative affirmative and negative, the presentation of the reflexive verbs, the uses of *ser* and *estar*, and nearly all the remarks concerning the formation of the verb and the use of the tenses, are original with him, have been constantly made use of by him in the section-room at West Point, and now appear in print for the first time. Even when occupied with most pressing duties, he would kindly consent to go over the manuscript patiently, advising, correcting and suggesting points that invariably enhanced its value.

PETER E. TRAUB.

WASHINGTON, D. C., October 1, 1899.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

SPANISH PRONUNCIATION

	PAGE
The Alphabet	1
Pronunciation	1
Vowels	2
Consonants	3
Exercises for Vowels and Consonants	5
Diphthongs and Triphthongs	6
Exercises for Diphthongs and Triphthongs	6
The Written or Graphic Accent	7
Syllabication	8
Capitals and Punctuation	9
General Exercises	9
Reading Exercise	10
Spanish-American Pronunciation	12

THE SPANISH VERB

Classification of Spanish Verbs	13
The Three Conjugations	13
On the Use of the Tenses	15
General Remarks on the Formation of the Verb	17
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb <i>Haber</i>	20
• Regular Verbs : Terminations of the Three Conjugations	21
Conjugation of the Model Verb <i>Hablar</i>	24
The Formation of the Compound Tenses	27
Compound Tenses of <i>Hablar</i>	28
The Interrogative Conjugation	30
The Negative Conjugation	31
The Negative-Interrogative Conjugation	34
• Conjugation of the Model Verb <i>Comer</i>	36
Conjugation of the Model Verb <i>Vivir</i>	38
Orthographic Changes	40
Table of Orthographic Changes	40
Conjugation of the Verb <i>Sacar</i>	42
" " " <i>Pagar</i>	44
" " " <i>Averiguar</i>	46
" " " <i>Lanzar</i>	48

	PAGE
Conjugation of the Verb <i>Vencer</i>	50
“ “ “ <i>Esparcir</i>	52
“ “ “ <i>Coger</i>	54
“ “ “ <i>Dirigir</i>	56
“ “ “ <i>Delinquir</i>	58
“ “ “ <i>Distinguir</i>	60
“ “ “ <i>Mullir</i>	62
“ “ “ <i>Bruñir</i>	64
“ “ “ <i>Tañer</i>	66
“ “ “ <i>Creer</i>	68
“ “ “ <i>Continuar</i>	70
“ “ Auxiliary Verb <i>Estar</i>	72
“ “ Progressive Verb <i>Estar Comiendo</i>	74
Pronominal Verbs	76
Table of Personal Pronouns and their Inflections	79
Conjugation of the (Accusative) Reflexive Verb <i>Lavarse</i>	80
Negative and Interrogative Conjugations of Reflexive Verbs	82
Conjugation of the (Dative) Reflexive Verb <i>Permitirse</i>	84
Conjugation of the Permanent Reflexive Verb <i>Alegrarse</i>	86
Impersonal Conjugation of the Permanent Reflexive Verb <i>Alegrarse</i>	88
Impersonal Reflexive used for the Personal Reflexive	90
Conjugation of the Reciprocal Verb <i>Abrazarse</i>	91
“ “ Auxiliary Verb <i>Ser</i>	92
“ “ Passive Verb <i>Ser Amado</i>	94
Reflexive Substitute for the Passive	96
Impersonal Verbs	97
Conjugation of Impersonal Verbs	99
Irregular Verbs	104
First Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Pensar</i>	108
“ “ “ “ <i>Errar</i>	112
“ “ “ “ <i>Sonar</i>	114
“ “ “ “ <i>Jugar</i>	116
“ “ “ “ <i>Perder</i>	118
“ “ “ “ <i>Mover</i>	120
“ “ “ “ <i>Oler</i>	122
“ “ “ “ <i>Cocer</i>	124
“ “ “ “ <i>Discernir</i>	126
Second Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Sentir</i>	128
“ “ “ “ <i>Erguir</i>	130
“ “ “ “ <i>Adquirir</i>	132
“ “ “ “ <i>Morir</i>	134

	PAGE
Third Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Servir</i>	136
" " " " <i>Reir</i>	138
Fourth Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Conocer</i>	140
" " " " <i>Lucir</i>	144
Fifth Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Atribuir</i>	146
" " " " <i>Argüir</i>	148
Sixth Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Andar</i>	150
" " " " <i>Caber</i>	152
" " " " <i>Decir</i>	154
" " " " <i>Traducir</i>	156
" " " " <i>Hacer</i>	158
" " " " <i>Poder</i>	160
" " " " <i>Poner</i>	162
" " " " <i>Querer</i>	164
" " " " <i>Saber</i>	166
" " " " <i>Tener</i>	168
" " " " <i>Traer</i>	170
" " " " <i>Venir</i>	172
Seventh Class :	
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb <i>Asir</i>	174
" " " " <i>Caer</i>	176
" " " " <i>Dar</i>	178
" " " " <i>Ir</i>	180
" " " " <i>Irse</i>	182
" " " " <i>Oír</i>	184
" " " " <i>Salir</i>	186
" " " " <i>Valer</i>	188
" " " " <i>Ver</i>	190
" " " " <i>Yacer</i>	192
Table of the Classes of Irregular Verbs	194
Defective Verbs	195
Conjugation of the Defective Verb <i>Abolir</i>	196
Other Defective Verbs	198
Irregular Past Participles	200
INDEX	203

SPANISH

PRONUNCIATION AND ACCENT

THE ALPHABET

1. The Spanish alphabet comprises thirty letters; twenty-six simple and four compound, as follows:

Characters	Names	Pronunciation	Characters	Names	Pronunciation
a	a	<i>a</i> in <i>mama</i>	n	ene	<i>ã' nay</i>
b	be	<i>bay</i>	ñ	eñe	<i>ain' yay</i>
c	ce	<i>thã</i> in <i>thane</i>	o	o	<i>o</i> in <i>lone</i>
ch	che	<i>chã</i> in <i>chafe</i>	p	pe	<i>pay</i>
d	de	<i>they</i>	q	cu	<i>coo</i>
e	e	<i>ã</i> in <i>bale</i>	r	ere	<i>ã' ray</i>
f	efe	<i>ã' fay</i>	rr	erre	<i>air' ray</i>
g	ge	<i>hay</i>	s	ese	<i>ã' say</i>
h	hache	<i>ã' tchay</i>	t	te	<i>tã</i> in <i>take</i>
i	i	<i>ee</i> in <i>fee</i>	u	u	<i>oo</i> in <i>pool</i>
j	jota	<i>hõ'ta</i>	v	ve	<i>vay</i>
k	ka	<i>ca</i> in <i>carry</i>	w	doble u	<i>though' blay oo</i>
l	ele	<i>ã' lay</i>	x	equis	<i>ã' kees</i>
ll	elle	<i>ail' yay</i>	y	ye	<i>yay</i>
m	eme	<i>ã' may</i>	z	zeta	<i>thã' tã, (th in thane)</i>

2. These letters, consisting of vowels and consonants, are all of the feminine gender and, with the exception of *c* and *g*, have always practically the same sound. Ex.: la *i*, las *íes*; la jota, las jotas.

3. *K* and *w* are used only in words from foreign languages. Ex.: Wáshington, kilogramo.

PRONUNCIATION

4. In Spanish the vowel sounds preponderate. They are full and sonorous, whereas the consonant sounds are more or less slurred and even suppressed.

5. With the exception of *h* and of *u* when the latter is placed after *g* (see 27), and in certain cases when placed after *g* (see 20, 3), there are no silent letters in Spanish; for, excepting the above, every letter in a word is pronounced.

6. The sounds in Spanish are not given as sharply as in English, tonic accent being nothing more than a lengthening of the accented syllable. This indolent intonation produces a more or less drawling effect in the language, when spoken slowly.

NOTE: Until the written or graphic accent is explained (see 44), the vowel to be prolonged in sound will be indicated in heavy type. Should a written accent (´) appear over a vowel in heavy type, the sound is not at all affected thereby.

VOWELS

7. The vowels are *a*, *e*, *i*, (*y*), *o*, *u*.

<i>a</i>	sounds like <i>a</i> in <i>mama</i> .	Ex.: <i>la</i> , <i>ma</i> , <i>na</i> , <i>ta</i> , <i>fa</i> .
<i>e</i>	sounds like <i>a</i> in <i>bale</i> .	Ex.: <i>le</i> , <i>me</i> , <i>ne</i> , <i>te</i> , <i>fe</i> .
<i>i</i> (<i>y</i>)	sounds like <i>ee</i> in <i>fee</i> .	Ex.: <i>li</i> , <i>ly</i> , <i>mi</i> , <i>my</i> , <i>ni</i> , <i>ny</i> , <i>ti</i> , <i>ty</i> .
<i>o</i>	sounds like <i>o</i> in <i>lone</i> .	Ex.: <i>lo</i> , <i>mo</i> , <i>no</i> , <i>to</i> , <i>fo</i> .
<i>u</i>	sounds like <i>oo</i> in <i>pool</i> .	Ex.: <i>lu</i> , <i>mu</i> , <i>nu</i> , <i>tu</i> , <i>fu</i> .

NOTE: In these and similar monosyllabic examples the vowels in Spanish are pronounced without the slight glide at the end, so common in English, and making almost an additional syllable. Therefore *do not pronounce* as though it were *láuh*, *léuh*, *líuh*, *lóuh*, *lúuh*, etc., but *do pronounce without this addition*, clear, full, and prolonged, *la*, *le*, *li*, *lo*, *lu*, etc.

8. Double *e* (*ee*) occurs in some words. Each *e* is sounded.

Ex.: *lee*, *cree*.

9. Final unaccented *e* is shortened in sound like *ai* in *said*.

Ex.: *vase* (*va-sè*, not *va-say*).

10. Before *n* and *r*, ending a syllable,

e sounds like *ai* in *fair*. Ex.: *comer*, *romper*, *gobernar*.

o sounds like *o* in *long*. Ex.: *el humor*, *el honor*, *la honra*.

11. *U*, when sounded before another vowel in the same syllable, is like the English *w* in *way*. Ex.: *agua* = *a-gwa*, *bueno* = *bweno*, *Guánica* = *Gwá-ni-ca* (not *a-goo-a*, *boo-e-no*, *Goo-á-ni-ca*). But *gradúe* = *gra-doo-e*, because *u* and *e* are not in the same syllable (see 46).

12. *Y* is a vowel when it stands alone or at the end of a word. Ex.: *y*, *ley*, *rey*.

CONSONANTS

13. The consonants are *b, c, ch, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, ll, m, n, ñ, p, q, r, rr, s, t, v, w, x, (y,) z.*
14. **B** is almost like the English *b*, but the lips are not pressed together in sounding the Spanish *b*. Owing to this, *b* and *v* sound very much alike and are often mistaken one for the other: Spanish *Habana* is written and pronounced in English *Havana*. Ex.: *bomba, bonito, débil, débito.*
15. **C** has two distinct sounds.
1. Before *e* or *i* it has the strong sound of *th* in *thin*. Ex.: *cita, cena, Ponce.*
 2. In all other situations except *ch*, it has the sound of *k*. Ex.: *cabo, alcoba, cubo, electro.*
 3. **Qu** takes the place of *c* before *e* or *i* to give the sound of *k*. Ex.: *tocar, toque, chico, chiquito.*
16. **Cc** occurs only before *e* or *i*; hence in accordance with the preceding rule it has the sound of *kth*. Ex.: *accesible, dicción.*
17. **Ch** has the sound of *ch* in *church*. Ex.: *chulo, china, chico, chisme.* *Ch* usually follows *c* in the dictionary.
18. **D** has the soft sound of *th* in *then*; especially between vowels, and before *r*. At the end of a word it approximates the sound of *t*. Ex.: *vivido, hablado, Madrid.*
19. **F, k, l, m, n, p, t,** have the same sound as in English. Ex.: *feble, kilómetro, luna, mano, notable, pena, tocado.*
20. **G** has two distinct sounds.
1. Before *e* or *i* it is a palatal guttural like *ch* in the German *ich*. Ex.: *general, gengibre, San Germán.*
 2. In all other situations, it is hard like *g* in *go*. Ex.: *gato, goma, gusano.*
 3. To make *g* hard before *e* or *i*, *u* must be inserted between them. The *u* is not sounded. Ex.: *gueta, guincha, guindo, gueltre, Aguinaldo.*
 4. If necessary to sound the *u* of *gue, gui*, a diaeresis (*¨*) must be placed over it. Ex.: *vergüenza, averigüéis, argüir, Mayagüez.*

21. **H** is always silent except before *ue*, in which case it has the sound of *h* in *hole*. Ex.: *hablar, hambre, huevo, hueso*.
22. **J** is always a strong guttural produced by depressing the chin and clearing the throat, causing the soft palate to vibrate. Ex.: *jota, junta, jamás*.
1. In *reloj*, pronounced *reló*, *j* is silent. In the plural it is sounded, *relojes*.
23. **Ll** has the sound of *lli* in *William*. Ex.: *llorar, llevar, Agoncillo, silla*. It follows *l* in the dictionary.
24. **Nm** takes the place of *mm* in English words. Ex.: *immersion = inmersión*.
25. **Nn** occurs in some words, each *n* being sounded. Ex.: *en-negrecer*.
26. **Ñ** sounds like *gn* in *mignonette*. Ex.: *año, leña, otoño*. It follows *n* in the dictionary.
- NOTE: This mark (˜) is called *tilde* in Spanish.
27. **Q** occurs only before *ue* or *ui*. *Qu* is then equal to *k* in sound. Ex.: *que, qui, querido, quiero*. The English sound of *qu* in *quart* is represented in Spanish by *cu*. Ex.: *cuanto, cuarto*.
28. **R** has the sound of *r* in English; but at the beginning and end of words and after *l, n, s*, it is slightly rolled. Ex.: *roto, hablar, alrededor, Enrique, ara*.
29. **Rr**, each *r* is distinctly sounded, thus producing a strong roll. Ex.: *perro, ferrocarril, error*.
30. **S** always has the hissing sound of *s* in *sun*. Ex.: *su, se, solo, son*.
31. **V** is like the English *v*, except that the upper teeth are not firmly pressed against the lower lip; owing to this, *v* and *b* sound very much alike, and are often mistaken one for the other. Ex.: *vara, vela, visto, votos*.
32. **W** imitates the sound it has in the language from which the word is taken, for, like *k*, it is used only in foreign words. Ex.: *Wáldersee, West Point* (*pronounced Váldersee, Uest Point*).
33. **X** has the sound of *x* in *wax* (*waks*). Ex.: *sexo, extran-*

gero, extremo. In older Spanish *x* was guttural, but *j* now takes the place of guttural *x*. Ex.: Méjico.

34. **Y** is a consonant when it begins a syllable; it then has the sound of *y* in *you*. Ex.: *leyes, reyes, Cayo, Arroyo*.
35. **Z** always has the strong sound of *th* in *thin*. Ex.: *zeta, zapador, haz, zanja, Luzón, Múñoz, Martínez*.

EXERCISES

SIMPLE VOWELS AND CONSONANTS

NOTE: In the following words, if a vowel has an accent (´) over it, lengthen that vowel. If there is no accent (´) over any vowel and if the word ends in a vowel or *n, s*, lengthen the vowel in the syllable next to the last; but if the word ends in *y* or a consonant not *n, s*, lengthen the vowel in the last syllable. The syllable that is lengthened should always be a little higher in pitch than the others.

36. *Amo, aya, toro, tela, vive, luna, uno, cuyo, niña, vine, ley, rey, otro, tintero, amigo, amputar, capa, escabeche, modista, mogote, purismo, santidad, gobernador, triste, humanidad, berlina, encorvar, encorvada, todos, usted, cañón, rifle, pistola, grano, hacha, cruz, caballo, cenceño, cepita, comiste, hablaste, corromper, proveer, yacer, asen, asgan, bóveda, conozco, muchísimo, chiche, chiquito, cigarra, ciclo, cigüeño, cincho, certificado, dolor de cabeza, fechar, filosofador, garganta, girofina, glanduloso, gerifalte, gitano, gorgojoso, gorro, guzmanes, gutural, borracho, guindilla, guerrilla, guedejudo, hombre, hocico, juez, juzgado, joya, judas, jarapote, reloj, giralda, gesticular, liguilla, libertadamente, lucir, llovido, llevadero, conmigo, chiquirritín, motín, motines, motilón, motilones, ennoblecer, quemar, querellarse, quintañón, quiromántico, santazo, sanmigueleño, sampsuquino, expansivo, extrañamente, próximo, contrahaz, contrabandista, azucena, revólver, tipográfico, cloroformo, característico, sinopsis, aproches, virulento, enfermiza, cable, capitán, soldado, cabo, sargento, coronel, ejército, electrómetro, ellos, vosotras, ustedes, gramática, adjetivo, nombre, pronombre, castellana, ejemplos, hija, sílabas, acento, culebrazo, damnificador, desasosegadamente, música, mojíganga, regocijadamente, segundogénito, sencillez, villancejo, yasquero, zipizape, Malate, Malolos, Quebradillas, Manila, Luneta, Fajardo, Culebra, Manzanillo, Filipinos.*

DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS

37. The strong vowels are, *a, o, e*; the weak vowels are *i* (*y*), *u*.

NOTE: *y* takes the place of *i* at the end of a word.

38. A diphthong is a combination of a strong vowel with a weak vowel or of two weak vowels with each other, counting as a *single* syllable, although each vowel has its own individual sound.

39. A triphthong is a combination of a strong vowel between two weak vowels, counting as a *single* syllable, although each vowel has its own individual sound.

40. In a diphthong or triphthong, the strong vowel is pitched a little higher than the weak and is prolonged at the expense of the weak vowel or vowels. If the diphthong consists of two weak vowels, *it is always the last one* that is prolonged.

41. Two strong vowels coming together count as *two* syllables.
Ex.: a|e, a|o, o|e, e|o, e|a, o|a.

trae, maestro, aecho, acaece; nao, rao, aova, aojo; toesa, moeda, roer, poeta; meneo, deseo, veo, trineo; océano, zea, lea, sean, aspeado; boa, boato, poa, roano; zee, lee, roo, zoofito, Humacao, Mindanao, Coamo, guineo.

DIPHTHONGS. (Strong and weak vowels)

42. 1. ai, ay, au, ia, ua; oi, oy, ou, io, uo; ei, ey, eu, ie, ue.

aire, hay, paraíso, caiga; pausa, aun, causar; aliviado, rociada, biasa, piache; cuando, cuatro, Juan, mengua; zoilo, oigo, oidor, hoy, soy, voy, doy; bou, toucán, coutelina; Dios, biombo, diobre; fatuo, duodeno; aceite, reino, reír; rey, bey, dey; deuda, feudal, viene, tiempo, nadie, efigie; nuevo, pues, puerto, bueno, Cayey, Siboney, Jauco, Yauco, Santiago, Guanajay, El Caney, Cauto.

DIPHTHONGS. (Two weak vowels)

2. iu, ui, uy.

viudo, ciudad, diurno; zuiza, fuir, huimos, ruido; muy.

TRIPHTHONGS

43. *iai, iei, uai, uay, uei, uey.*

variáis, variéis, averiguáis, averigüéis, Paraguay, Uruguay, buey, Chiluey.

NOTE: The vowels in the order of sonorousness are *a, o, e, i, u*; so that the division into strong and weak is not arbitrary but natural.

It is believed by some that unless a diphthong or triphthong gets the tonic accent each vowel is of exactly the same length. Ex.: *baile, bailarín.*

In the first case, *a* is prolonged at the expense of *i*, because *bai* gets the tonic accent; whereas in the second case, since the tonic accent is not on *bai*, it is claimed that *a* and *i* are of exactly the same length. This might be the case if the division into strong and weak vowels were arbitrary; but being a natural division, based upon the organs of speech, diphthongs and triphthongs should always be pronounced more or less the same way, whether they get the tonic accent or not.

THE WRITTEN OR GRAPHIC ACCENT

44. The graphic accent (´) indicates to the eye the fact that the word over which it appears is an exception to one of the two general laws of Spanish pronunciation, or else it shows that the word is used with exceptional meaning.

These laws are:

1. Words of more than one syllable ending in a vowel (except *y*), or in a diphthong, or either of the consonants, *n, s*, have the tonic accent on the next to the last syllable. Ex.: *amigo, ventana, hablan, reyes, porque, seria, nadie.*

2. Words of more than one syllable ending in *y*, or in any consonant except *n* or *s*, have the tonic accent on the last syllable. Ex.: *estoy, Paraguay, hablar, comed, mortal.*

45. If the word is not pronounced in accordance with the above laws, a graphic accent must be used to indicate which syllable gets the tonic accent. Ex.: *rincón, huérfano, Andrés.*

46. If the syllable requiring the graphic accent is a diphthong or a triphthong, the graphic accent must be placed over the strong vowel, or over the last of two weak ones. Ex.: *piélago, después, cáustico.*

But, if the Spaniard pronounces the word (consult Spanish dictionary) with the tonic accent on any other vowel, the

graphic accent must appear, of course, over such vowel, thus dissolving the diphthong or triphthong into two syllables. Ex.: leído, gradúe, días, bahía.

47. The following monosyllables are always written with a graphic accent:

1. The preposition *á* and the conjunctions *é, ó, ú*.

2. Monosyllabic forms of verbs in the Past Definite. Ex.: fuí, fué, dí, dió, ví, vió, etc.

3. The more emphatic one of two monosyllables of identical form. Ex.: él, *he*, el, *the*; más, *more*, mas, *but*; tú, *thou*, tu, *thy*.

48. The graphic accent is used to distinguish between the uses of the same word in different meanings. Ex.: sólo, *only*, solo, *alone*; qué? *what?* que, *that*; cómo? *how?* como, *as*; bájo, *I go down*, bajo, *under*.

49. The graphic accent is used in certain correlatives: cuáles . . . cuáles.

NOTE: The graphic accent over the *i* does away with the dot, *í*. The initial letter of a sentence, although a capital, takes the graphic accent when necessary. Ex.: *Á* decir verdad, no puedo comer.

50. The foregoing is the method of using the graphic accent adopted by the Royal Spanish Academy in 1888. Up to that time *n* and *s* had been considered as consonants; by this system, they are considered as vowels, *for purposes of written accentuation*.

SYLLABICATION

51. A single consonant between two vowels always goes with the following vowel to form a syllable: ca-sa, me-sa, a-mor, flu-xión.

52. The letters *ch, ll, ñ* and *rr* are considered as simple consonants: chi-co, ca-lle, ni-ño, tie-rra.

53. Generally two or three consonants between vowels are separated; the first one belonging to the preceding syllable: con-ten-to, in-mer-sión, ac-ción, en-no-ble-cer.

54. Diphthongs and triphthongs are indivisible: bue-no, la-bo-rio-so, a-ve-ri-güéis, ver-güen-za, a-ve-ri-güáis.

CAPITALS AND PUNCTUATION

55. Capitals are used as in English.

Él es Juan. Quiero estar en París.

56. The following are exceptions:

1. The names of the days of the week and of the months of the year:

January, *enero*, June, *junio*, August, *agosto*; Monday, *lunes*, Saturday, *sábado*, Sunday, *domingo*.

2. Proper adjectives:

El libro francés, *the French book*; el comerciante alemán, *the German merchant*.

But el Francés, *the Frenchman*, el Alemán, *the German*.

3. The pronoun *yo*, unless it begins a sentence or introduces a direct quotation:

Yo estoy aquí. Él ha dicho: "Yo tengo dinero." ¿Qué he dicho yo?

57. Rules for punctuation are the same as in English, except that interrogative and exclamatory sentences require in addition an inverted mark at the beginning (¿) (¡) unless the sentence commences with an interrogative pronoun or adverb, which, always having an accent, will indicate sufficiently the kind of sentence. This, however, is not always followed, and it is always correct to use the two marks in any interrogative or exclamatory sentence. Ex.: ¿Quiere V. este libro? Qué tienes, Juanito? Qué lástima! ¡Ay de mí!

GENERAL EXERCISES

DIPHTHONGS, TRIPHONGS, AND TWO STRONG VOWELS

58. Aire, airoso, cantáis, hay, causa, caudal, heroico, voy, soy, sois, bou, rey, reinado, veis, feudo, eunuco, lluvia, diablo, cual, agua, aprobación, nación, cuota, mutuo, fiel, nieta, nadie, pues, fuego, pueril, ciudad, viudo, muy, cuidado, cuita. Cambiáis, variéis, fraguáis, guay, santiguéis, buey, país, aún, oído, léi, armonía, período, confíe, falúa, continuo, continúe, flúido, día, tío, dúo, leído, caída. Caer, traemos, aecho, aéreo, aerómetro, aoristo,

aovado, oenas, oeste, oenate, eólico, veo, leo, ea pues! marea, galantea, cojea, bautismo, toreador, canoa, canoero, canói, canoíta, guardia, faccioso, droguería, juez, creeré, reunir, héroe, cuadro, cuaderno, cuestión, cuestiones, matigüelo, parihuela, sanguisuela, sangüeso, excepción, argüimos, cuesta, recuerdo, hierro, suelo, sueño, yuxtaposición, conmociones, güepil, relampaguea, meajuela, piernas, agonía, debió, menguada, cotidiano, melifluo, zuizón, mausoleo, toalla, meaúca, mauseolo, Vizcaino, Camagüeyano, Nicaragüense, caracteres, regímenes, téngase, buitres, andamio, ganzúa, cigüeña, cazuela, cuidadoso, tortuoso, imbuido, Escorial, majuelo, Malagueño, matrimonio, narración, ocurrencia, cuarenta, curioso, distraído, Guipuzcoano, Leonés, idioma, ingeniero, leudo, juicio, monstruo, revuelto, tejuelo, santiguarse, viajero, lisonjean, aeronautas, titubeó, bailadores, pies, avergüenzo, aguardo, salteador, náufrago, hubiésemos, mareado, oigo, usuario, albaceazgo, votación, Sierra Maestra, Guayama, Aibonito, Utuado, Vieques, Cienfuegos, Chihuahua, Puerto Rico, Puertorriqueña.

READING

NOTE: Spanish vowels coming together, whether in the same or different words, are sounded with a smooth glide of the voice from one to the other, without the distinct separation made in sounding the vowels in English words. Ex.: Mi amigo está aquí.

LA HERMANA DE LA CARIDAD

59. “— Óyeme, y pásmate, Eduardo. Yo he visto aquí, un ministro poderoso, dueño de la voluntad del rey, caer en desgracia. La gente lo sabía, y él lo ignoraba. Un baile fué la señal de su desgracia. La reina acostumbraba á bailar todas las noches de sarao el primer rigodón con él: la noche destinada á herirle, no lo bailó. Apartáronse de él los cortesanos como si estuviera apestado; riéronse de su catadura los mismos que le prestaban homenaje; encontróse en aquellos salones donde todas las frentes, hasta las frentes coronadas, le acataban, solo, aislado, sin un amigo. Su desgracia creció, y un día se vió preso, y otro próximo al cadalso, y hoy anda acaso en tierra extraña, pidiendo una miserable limosna para mantener á sus hijos.

— ¿Y nosotros podemos temer eso mismo?

— Podemos, debemos temer más, no lo dudes.

— Nos iremos á un país extraño.

— No te dejarán.

— Pero, dijo Eduardo mirando el reloj, aún no es hora, no, ni con mucho, de que venga.

— ¡Oh! ¡Si no viniera, Dios mío; si no viniera, como he oído susurrar á mis enemigos por los jardines! . . .

Y Margarita se pasaba la mano con delirio por la frente, como para alejar una sombra.

Tanta era su preocupación, que se había olvidado de Ángela. Su ambición eclipsaba su amor. Sin embargo, muy grande era el peligro, cuando ella, que tanto se acordaba siempre de sus rivales, y que tanto se complacía en martirizar á Eduardo, no le echaba en cara irónicamente, como de costumbre, la dramática escena de Ángela. Margarita vivía en la tempestad por el ruído de las grandes pasiones, por la adoración de las gentes, por la grandeza de su casa, por su poder, por todas esas cualidades prestadas que eran el secreto maravilloso de su fortuna y de sus placeres. Todo aquel dorado castillo podía caer en una hora, en un momento podía destruirse con un solo soplo.

Y para el sér que está acostumbrado á respirar el aliento de la tempestad; para el que vive en medio de las encrespadas pasiones; para el que no tiene más luz que la luz que despiden todos los sentimientos exaltados; para ese sér, ciertamente, separarse de tal atmósfera, vivir, agitarse en otros horizontes más solitarios ó más tranquilos, equivale á la muerte. Esos seres, que buscan el ruído, el estrépito, la tempestad, la lucha, y quieren vivir siempre luchando y combatiendo, no tienen idea alguna de la felicidad.”

E. Castelar.

SPANISH-AMERICAN PRONUNCIATION

60. The Spanish-American countries are CUBA, PUERTO RICO, GUAM, the PHILIPPINE ISLANDS, Mexico, Central America, Venezuela, Argentina, and the Western Republics of South America.

61. Spanish *as spoken* in Spanish-American countries differs from pure Castilian in the following respects:

1. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} C \text{ before } e \text{ and } i, \text{ and} \\ Z \text{ in all cases} \end{array} \right\}$ have the sound of *s*.

Constitución, pronounced *constitusión*; zozobra, pronounced *sosobra*; azucena, pronounced *asusena*.

2. *D* in the ending *ado*, is silent: hablado, pronounced *ablao*.

NOTE: *D* in the ending *ido* should never be silent: comido, never pronounced *comfo*.

3. *ll* is like *y* in *you*: caballo, pronounced *cabayo*; millón, pronounced *miyón*.

NOTE: In Spanish-American pronunciation we also find that

1. *gu* before *a* and *o* is pronounced like *w*: agua, pronounced *awa*; antiguo, pronounced *antivo*.

2. *b* before *ue* is silent: bueno, pronounced *weno*.

3. In certain localities *g* and *b* are interchangeable before *ue*: bueno = *giüeno*.

4. *es* is generally used for *ex* when followed by a consonant not *h*: *escelente* = *excelente*.

In Spanish-American spelling,

5. *y* is seldom used as a vowel: *rei* will usually be found instead of *rey*.

6. *g* is seldom used as a guttural; *jeneral* will usually be found instead of *gen-eral*.

62. In Spanish-America there is frequently confusion in the use of the graphic accent; hence care must be exercised, especially in the pronunciation of proper names of persons and places. The following are examples of words that are rarely found written with the graphic accent: Gómez, García, Las Guásimas, Guantánamo, Macías, Cárdenas.

The foregoing Spanish-American pronunciation is also heard throughout Southern Spain and even in Castile. In dignified discourse, however, pure Castilian is used.

THE SPANISH VERB

CLASSIFICATION OF SPANISH VERBS

63. With respect to their form, Spanish verbs are divided into regular, irregular, and defective verbs.

1. Regular verbs are those which follow the model verbs throughout.

2. Irregular verbs are those which deviate more or less from the model verbs.

3. Defective verbs are those which are lacking in some of the persons or tenses.

64. With respect to their signification and use, Spanish verbs are divided into :

1. Auxiliary verbs, which assist in the conjugation of other verbs.

2. Active or transitive verbs, which take a direct object.

3. Neuter or intransitive verbs, which do not take a direct object, the action being complete in itself.

4. Passive verbs, which are formed from active verbs by making the direct object of the active verb the subject of the passive verb.

5. Pronominal verbs, which have an objective pronoun that represents the same person or thing as the subject of the verb.

6. Impersonal verbs, which have neither subject nor object, and usually refer to some phenomena of nature; they are conjugated only in the infinitive, present and past participles, and in the third person singular of the other moods and tenses.

The Three Conjugations

65. 1. All Spanish verbs end in *ar*, *er* or *ir*, thus giving rise to three large groups of verbs called conjugations.

Verbs ending in *ar*, as *hablar*, to speak, belong to the first conjugation.

Verbs ending in *er*, as *comer*, to eat, belong to the second conjugation.

Verbs ending in *ir*, as *vivir*, to live, belong to the third conjugation.

2. The conjugation of a verb is a regular arrangement of its moods, tenses, persons, and numbers.

3. In Spanish there are the same persons and numbers as in English and in French.

66. In Spanish all verbs except defective verbs are conjugated in the following moods and tenses :

INFINITIVE MOOD

Present Infinitive.

Past Participle.

Present Participle.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Tenses :

Present.

Imperfect.

Past Definite.

Future.

Conditional (consequent clause).

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Tenses :

Present.

Imperfect (first form).

Imperfect (second form).

Future.

Conditional (antecedent or *if* clause).

IMPERATIVE MOOD

Present Tense.

This arrangement of moods and tenses has been adopted as being the one best calculated to give the learner a proper understanding of the uses of the moods and tenses of a Spanish verb. It is not the arrangement that is given in all Spanish grammars.

ON THE USE OF THE TENSES

67. The following remarks on the use of these moods and tenses will be found of assistance. They should be carefully read over in connection with the conjugations of *haber* and the model verbs and the respective translations noted.

Infinitive Mood

68. 1. The present infinitive corresponds to the French and English infinitive.

2. The present participle corresponds to the French and English present participle.

3. The past participle corresponds to the French and English past participle, and is used to form the compound tenses.

Indicative Mood

69. 1. The indicative mood corresponds to the French and English indicative.

2. The present tense is used exactly like the present in French and English, and translates the three forms, — the absolute, the emphatic, and the progressive; e.g., 'I speak,' 'I do speak,' 'I am speaking.'

3. The imperfect tense corresponds to the French imperfect, and translates the progressive and the customary past; e.g., 'I was speaking' or 'I used to speak.'

4. The past definite corresponds to the French past definite and like the latter is the favorite tense for historical narration.

5. The future and the conditional correspond to the French future and conditional and to the English *shall* and *should* respectively.

Subjunctive Mood

70. 1. The subjunctive mood in Spanish, just as in French, expresses doubt, desire, necessity or emotion, and is used in a clause *dependent* on a verb expressing one of these ideas. In other words, the rules governing the subjunctive in Spanish are, with one or two exceptions, practically the same as in French.

2. The arrangement of the tenses, side by side with those of the indicative mood, followed in this verb book, is not at all necessary, and is done merely for convenience.

3. The present subjunctive in Spanish is used very nearly as the present subjunctive in French is used; that is, to express present or future time with reference to a verb in the principal proposition, in the present or future indicative or in the imperative.

4. The imperfect subjunctive, either form (preference being given to the form in *se*), is used very nearly as the imperfect subjunctive in French is used; that is, to express present or future time with reference to a verb in some past tense in the principal proposition.

5. The fact that there are two forms in the imperfect subjunctive need not be confusing, for we have in English the same two forms. We may say in English, 'if I had' or 'if I should have,' which mean exactly the same thing and correspond precisely to the forms in Spanish, *si hubiese* and *si hubiera*.

6. The future subjunctive is a tense that does not occur in French or English. We have, however, some equivalent to it in English: we may say, 'if I go' or 'if I shall go'; the former being the more frequent and conversational, the latter the more literary. So in Spanish, the future subjunctive is a literary tense and is supplanted almost entirely by the present subjunctive at the present day, except where necessary to expressly refer to some future contingency, e.g., 'When he has finished, he will write,' *Cuando hubiere concluido escribirá*.

7. The conditional subjunctive is placed beside the conditional indicative merely for the convenience of the student, and is nothing more than the imperfect subjunctive, either form, used in an *if*-clause (antecedent); the resulting proposition (conse-

quent clause) requiring the conditional indicative. There is this great difference between Spanish and French: *if* (except when used with a present tense) requires the subjunctive in Spanish, whereas in French it requires the indicative.

The Spanish usage is the same as in English: 'If I had (or should have) gone, I should have seen,' *si hubiese* (or *hubiera*) *ido, habría visto*.

Imperative Mood

71. 1. The imperative mood is the mood of command; and, as a command can be given only to a person directly addressed, the *true imperative* in Spanish exists only in the second person singular and plural.

2. To take the place of the first and third persons singular and plural, lacking in the imperative *affirmative*, the corresponding persons and numbers of the present subjunctive are employed optatively.

3. It is a noticeable peculiarity, however, that in the imperative *negative*, the *second* persons singular and plural are *also* taken from the present subjunctive; so that in the imperative negative all the verb forms are exactly the same as the verb forms of the same persons and numbers of the present subjunctive. On account of this confusing peculiarity, the imperative affirmative and negative are given for all verbs.

4. The imperative mood is always in the present tense with reference to any time, past, present or future; e.g., 'I should have said, speak!' 'I said to him, speak!' 'I say to him, speak!' 'I shall say to him, speak!' 'I shall have said to him, speak!'

5. The verb *haber*, being at present used only as an auxiliary verb, has no imperative, although some old forms survive from its former use as an active verb.

NOTE: See *haber*, impersonal, p. 99.

GENERAL REMARKS ON THE FORMATION OF VERBS

72. 1. As already stated, the infinitive always ends in *ar, er* or *ir*.

2. The present participle of all verbs ends in *ndo*, corresponding to the French ending *ant* and to the English ending *ing*; *ando* for verbs in *ar*, *iendo* for verbs in *er* and *ir*.

3. The past participle ends in *do*; *ado* for verbs in *ar*, *ido* for verbs in *er* and *ir*.

Indicative Mood

73. 1. Notice first the omission of all pronoun subjects, where in Spanish differs from French and English. The inflectional endings indicate the person, number, tense and mood; the pronoun subjects are therefore not used unless necessary for emphasis or to avoid ambiguity occasioned by certain verb-forms being the same for different persons or tenses. This dropping of pronoun subjects may occur in English in certain cases; as, 'Hast heard the news?' 'Wilt come to-morrow?' etc. This, the great exception in English, is the rule in Spanish. In the conjugations of the model verbs the pronoun subjects have been inserted to familiarize the student with them and the corresponding verb forms.

74. 1. *Present Tense*: The ending *s* is characteristic of the second person singular of the present indicative, in fact of all second persons singular except the imperative affirmative and the past definite.

2. The ending *mos* is characteristic of the first person plural in all moods and tenses, and corresponds to the ending *ons* in French.

3. The ending *is* is characteristic of the second person plural in all the moods and tenses except the imperative affirmative, and corresponds to the ending *ez* in French.

4. The ending *n* is characteristic of the third person plural in all the moods and tenses and corresponds to the ending *nt* in French.

75. *Imperfect Tense*: The ending *ía* is characteristic of the imperfect indicative (except for verbs in *ar*, in which the ending is *aba*) and of the conditional indicative, and corresponds to the ending *ais* in the French imperfect and conditional.

76. *Past Definite Tense*: The endings *iste*, *isteis*, second person singular and plural, are characteristic of verbs in *er* and *ir*; for verbs in *ar*, they become *aste*, *asteis*.

77. *Future Tense* : This tense is formed by adding to the full infinitive form the endings of the present indicative of *haber*, which makes the tense mean literally, 'I have to do,' so and so. 'I shall do it'; exactly as in the French future.

78. *Conditional Tense* : This tense is formed by adding the endings of the imperfect indicative of *haber* to the full indicative form, which makes the tense literally mean, 'I had to do' so and so. 'I should do it' *if* something else happened, exactly as in the French conditional.

Subjunctive Mood

79. 1. *Present Tense* : The vowel *a* of the ending in the present subjunctive is characteristic of all verbs in *er* and *ir*; for verbs in *ar* the characteristic vowel of the ending is *e*. This tense can, in almost all Spanish verbs, be obtained by taking the first person singular present indicative, and changing the ending *o* to *a* or *e*.

Note again *s*, *mos*, *is* and *n* as characteristic endings of the respective persons and numbers, as explained under the indicative mood.

2. All the remaining tenses of the subjunctive are formed in every verb in Spanish without exception from the third person plural of the past definite, by changing the ending *ron* into *ra*, *ras*, *ra*, *ramos*, *rais*, *ran*, for the imperfect subjunctive, first form; *se*, *ses*, *se*, *semos*, *seis*, *sen*, for the imperfect subjunctive, second form; *re*, *res*, *re*, *remos*, *reis*, *ren*, for the future subjunctive.

Imperative Mood

80. 1. The second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present indicative, except in eight verbs: *haber*, *poner*, *tener*, *valer*, *decir*, *ir*, *venir*, *salir*.

2. The second person plural is *always* obtained directly from the infinitive by changing the final letter *r* into *d*.

3. The other persons, as before stated, are all present subjunctive, with subject placed after.

4. The pronoun subject, *when expressed*, always stands after the verb.

81. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB **HABER** = TO HAVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE	PRESENT PARTICIPLE	PAST PARTICIPLE
haber , to have.	habiendo , having.	habido , had.

INDICATIVE MOOD

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

*Present**Present*

yo	he	I have (do have, am having)	yo	haya	that I have <i>or</i> may have
tú	has	thou hast	tú	hayas	that thou have <i>or</i> mayst have
él	ha	he has	él	haya	that he have <i>or</i> may have
V.	ha	your honor has	V.	haya	that your honor have <i>or</i> may have
nosotros	hemos	we have	nosotros	hayamos	that we have <i>or</i> may have
vosotros	habéis	ye have	vosotros	hayáis	that ye have <i>or</i> may have
ellos	han	they have	ellos	hayan	that they have <i>or</i> may have
VV.	han	your honors have	VV.	hayan	that your honors have <i>or</i> may have

*Imperfect**Imperfect (First Form)*

yo	había	I was having <i>or</i> used to have	yo	hubiera	that I should have <i>or</i> had
tú	habías	thou wast having <i>or</i> used to have	tú	hubieras	that thou shouldst have <i>or</i> hadst
él	había	he was having <i>or</i> used to have	él	hubiera	that he should have <i>or</i> had
V.	había	your honor was having <i>or</i> used to have	V.	hubiera	that your honor should have <i>or</i> had
nosotros	habíamos	we were having <i>or</i> used to have	nosotros	hubiéramos	that we should have <i>or</i> had
vosotros	habíais	ye were having <i>or</i> used to have	vosotros	hubierais	that ye should have <i>or</i> had
ellos	habían	they were having <i>or</i> used to have	ellos	hubieran	that they should have <i>or</i> had
VV.	habían	your honors were having <i>or</i> used to have	VV.	hubieran	that your honors should have <i>or</i> had

*Past Definite**Imperfect (Second Form)*

yo	hube	I had	yo	hubiese	that I had <i>or</i> should have
tú	hubiste	thou hadst	tú	hubieses	that thou hadst <i>or</i> shouldst have
él	hubo	he had	él	hubiese	that he had <i>or</i> should have
V.	hubo	your honor had	V.	hubiese	that your honor had <i>or</i> should have
nosotros	hubimos	we had	nosotros	hubiésemos	that we had <i>or</i> should have
vosotros	hubisteis	ye had	vosotros	hubieseis	that ye had <i>or</i> should have
ellos	hubieron	they had	ellos	hubiesen	that they had <i>or</i> should have
VV.	hubieron	your honors had	VV.	hubiesen	that your honors had <i>or</i> should have

<i>Future</i>			<i>Future</i>				
yo	habré	I shall have	{	yo	hubiere	{	I have <i>or</i> shall have
tú	habrás	thou wilt have		tú	hubieres		thou have <i>or</i> shalt have
él	habrá	he will have		él	hubiere		he have <i>or</i> shall have
V.	habrá	your honor will have		V.	hubiere		your honor have <i>or</i> shall have
nosotros	habremos	we shall have		nosotros	hubiéremos		we have <i>or</i> shall have
vosotros	habréis	ye will have		vosotros	hubiereis		ye have <i>or</i> shall have
ellos	habrán	they will have		ellos	hubieren		they have <i>or</i> shall have
VV.	habrán	your honors will have		VV.	hubieren		your honors have <i>or</i> shall have

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while, although, etc.

<i>Conditional (Consequent)</i>			<i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i>				
yo	habría	I should have	{	yo	hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese	{	I should have <i>or</i> had
tú	habrías	thou wouldst have		tú	hubieras <i>or</i> hubieses		thou shouldst have <i>or</i> hadst
él	habría	he would have		él	hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese		he should have <i>or</i> had
V.	habría	your honor would have		V.	hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese		your honor should have <i>or</i> had
nosotros	habríamos	we should have		nosotros	hubiéramos <i>or</i> hubiésemos		we should have <i>or</i> had
vosotros	habrías	ye would have		vosotros	hubierais <i>or</i> hubieseis		ye should have <i>or</i> had
ellos	habrían	they would have		ellos	hubieran <i>or</i> hubiesen		they should have <i>or</i> had
VV.	habrían	your honors would have		VV.	hubieran <i>or</i> hubiesen		your honors should have <i>or</i> had

si

if

REGULAR VERBS

Terminations of the Three Conjugations

82. 1. The verbs *hablar*, to speak, *comer*, to eat, *vivir*, to live, have been selected as the model verbs of the respective conjugations.

2. By taking away the infinitive endings, *ar*, *er* and *ir*, we get the stem of the verb, *habl-*, *com-*, *viv-*.

3. The different moods, tenses, persons and numbers are formed by adding certain *inflectional endings*, fixed for each conjugation, to the *stem* of the verb; except in the future and the conditional indicative, where they are added directly to the full infinitive itself.

4. These fixed inflectional endings for the three conjugations are as follows :

	First Conjugation	Second Conjugation	Third Conjugation
<i>Infinitive</i>	-ar	-er	-ir
<i>Present Participle</i>	-ando	-iendo	-iendo
<i>Past Participle</i>	-ado	-ido	-ido
<i>Present Indicative</i>	{ -o -as -a -amos -áis -an	{ -o -es -e -emos -éis -en	{ -o -es -e -imos -ís -en
<i>Imperfect Indicative</i>	{ -aba -abas -aba -ábamos -abais -aban	{ -ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían	{ -ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían
<i>Past Definite Indicative</i>	{ -é -aste -ó -amos -asteis -aron	{ -í -iste -ió -imos -isteis -ieron	{ -í -iste -ió -imos -isteis -ieron
<i>Future Indicative</i>	{ -é -ás -á -emos -éis -án	{ -é -ás -á -emos -éis -án	{ -é -ás -á -emos -éis -án
<i>Conditional Indicative</i>	{ -ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían	{ -ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían	{ -ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían
<i>Present Subjunctive</i>	{ -e -es -e -emos -éis -en	{ -a -as -a -amos -áis -an	{ -a -as -a -amos -áis -an

	First Conjugation -ar	Second Conjugation -er	Third Conjugation -ir
<i>Imperfect Subjunctive First Form</i>	{ -ara -aras -ara -áramos -arais -aran	{ -iera -ieras -iera -iéramos -ierais -ieran	{ -iera -ieras -iera -iéramos -ierais -ieran
<i>Imperfect Subjunctive Second Form</i>	{ -ase -ases -ase -ásemos -aseis -asen	{ -iese -ieses -iese -iésemos -ieseis -iesen	{ -iese -ieses -iese -iésemos -ieseis -iesen
<i>Future Subjunctive</i>	{ -are -ares -are -áremos -areis -aren	{ -iere -ieres -iere -iéremos -iereis -ieren	{ -iere -ieres -iere -iéremos -iereis -ieren
<i>Imperative Mood</i>	{ - -a - - -ad -	{ - -e - - -ed -	{ - -e - - -id -

83. From the above it will be apparent:

1. That the endings in the second and third conjugations differ only in the first and second persons plural of the present indicative, and in the second person plural of the imperative.

2. That in all the conjugations the inflectional endings of the first and third persons singular are identical in the imperfect and the conditional tenses of the indicative mood, and also in all the tenses of the subjunctive; hence when ambiguity arises in these cases the pronoun subject, first or third person, must be employed.

3. That in the first and third conjugations the form of the verb in the first person plural of the present indicative and of the past definite is the same. The context must determine the tense intended.

4. In all other cases of like spelling the graphic accent determines the tense.

84. CONJUGATION OF THE MODEL VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **hablar**, to speak.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **hablando**, speaking.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **hablado**, spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo	hablo	I speak (do speak, am speaking)
tú	hablas	thou speakest
él	habla	he speaks
V.	habla	your honor speaks
nosotros	hablamos	we speak
vosotros	habláis	ye speak
ellos	hablan	they speak
VV.	hablan	your honors speak

Imperfect

yo	hablaba	I was speaking
tú	hablabas	thou wast speaking
él	hablaba	he was speaking
V.	hablaba	your honor was speaking
nosotros	hablábamos	we were speaking
vosotros	hablabais	ye were speaking
ellos	hablaban	they were speaking
VV.	hablaban	your honors were speaking

} or used to speak.

Past Definite

yo	hablé	I spoke
tú	hablaste	thou did'st speak
él	habló	he spoke
V.	habló	your honor spoke
nosotros	hablamos	we spoke
vosotros	hablasteis	ye spoke
ellos	hablaron	they spoke
VV.	hablaron	your honors spoke

Future

yo	hablaré	I shall speak
tú	hablarás	thou wilt speak
él	hablará	he will speak
V.	hablará	your honor will speak
nosotros	hablaremos	we shall speak
vosotros	hablaréis	ye will speak
ellos	hablarán	they will speak
VV.	hablarán	your honors will speak

Conditional (Consequent)

yo	hablaría	I should speak
tú	hablarías	thou wouldst speak
él	hablaría	he would speak
V.	hablaría	your honor would speak
nosotros	hablaríamos	we should speak
vosotros	hablaríais	ye would speak
ellos	hablarían	they would speak
VV.	hablarían	your honors would speak

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo	hable	that I speak	} or may speak, etc.
tú	hables	that thou speak	
él	hable	that he speak	
V.	hable	that your honor speak	
nosotros	hablemos	that we speak	
vosotros	habléis	that ye speak	
ellos	hablen	that they speak	
VV.	hablen	that your honors speak	

Imperfect (First Form)

yo	hablara	that I should speak	} or spoke.
tú	hablaras	that thou shouldst speak	
él	hablara	that he should speak	
V.	hablara	that your honor should speak	
nosotros	habláramos	that we should speak	
vosotros	hablarais	that ye should speak	
ellos	hablaran	that they should speak	
VV.	hablaran	that your honors should speak	

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	hablase	that I spoke	} or should speak, etc.
tú	hablases	that thou spoke	
él	hablase	that he spoke	
V.	hablase	that your honor spoke	
nosotros	hablásemos	that we spoke	
vosotros	hablaseis	that ye spoke	
ellos	hablasen	that they spoke	
VV.	hablasen	that your honors spoke	

Future

si, cuando mientras, aunque, etc.	yo	hablare	if, when, while, although, etc.	I speak	} or shall speak, etc.
	tú	hablares		thou speak	
	él	hablare		he speak	
	V.	hablare		your honor speak	
	nosotros	habláremos		we speak	
	vosotros	hablareis		ye speak	
	ellos	hablaren		they speak	
	VV.	hablaren		your honors speak	

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	yo	hablara	or hablase	if	I should speak thou shouldst speak he should speak your honor should speak we should speak ye should speak they should speak your honors should speak
	tú,	hablaras	or hablases		
	él	hablara	or hablase		
	V.	hablara	or hablase		
	nosotros	habláramos	or hablásemos		
	vosotros	hablarais	or habláseis		
	ellos	hablaran	or hablasen		
VV.	hablaran	or hablasen			} or spoke.

IMPERATIVE MOOD

habla	tú	speak thou
hablad	vosotros	speak ye
hable	yo	let me speak
hable	él	let him speak
hable	V.	speak, your honor
hablemos	nosotros	let us speak
hablen	ellos	let them speak
hablen	VV.	speak, your honors

NOTE. — Having thus learned the conjugation of the model verb *hablar*, practice in making use of the inflectional endings should at once be entered upon by requiring the student to write out the complete conjugations of verbs selected from the list given below. This prevents his merely memorizing *hablar*, and makes him alert in using verbs that he has never seen written out.

Throughout the book, at the end of the numerous conjugations, will be found in each practicable case a group of verbs that are to be conjugated in the same manner. These groups should all be made use of as suggested for *hablar*.

Whenever verbs are written out, neither ditto marks (" ") nor horizontal bars should be used to avoid the repetition of the stem of the verb, since the whole value of the exercise consists in having the student constantly write out in full the expression he will have to make use of in speaking or writing the language.

Conjugate in the same manner:

alabar , to praise.	montar , to mount.	quemar , to burn.
casar , to marry.	ordenar , to order.	robar , to rob.
convidar , to invite.	parar , to stop.	saltar , to leap.
hallar , to find.	pasar , to pass.	salvar , to save.
levantar , to raise.	pasear , to walk.	tomar , to take.
matar , to kill.	portar , to carry.	trabajar , to work.
mirar , to look.	preguntar , to ask.	tratar , to treat.

REMARK. — At West Point it is the practice to treat the verb separately from the rest of the grammar and to give out lessons in it every day so as to cover the whole subject twice in the course of three months. In a section of ten cadets, seven are sent to the blackboard with grammar papers, while three recite on reading and translation. These three cadets are then sent to the blackboard to write out a complete verb in Spanish in the lesson of that day or the day before. Each cadet at the board with a grammar paper is likewise required to write out in full one or two tenses of the verb in the day's lesson. In all cases the cadets are required to read off the verb, paying particular attention to the pronunciation. As this process takes place every day, the cadet quickly learns that the verb is a subject he never can escape from, and he soon becomes expert in the most important part of the Spanish language.

THE COMPOUND TENSES

85. 1. The compound tenses of all verbs in Spanish are formed by means of the auxiliary verb *haber*.

2. By adding the past participle of a verb to any simple tense of *haber*, we get the corresponding compound tense of the verb.

3. The auxiliary should never, as a general rule, be separated from the past participle by any other word.

4. The past participle of any verb conjugated with *haber* never varies for gender or number; thus coinciding with English usage and being contrary to French usage.

5. A compound tense of the imperative, second person plural is sometimes met with, though so rarely that we may consider that mood as not having one.

6. The following are the compound tenses. Their use is practically the same as in French. Their corresponding use in English is apparent from the respective translations. In the text they will be indicated simply as compound present indicative, compound imperfect indicative, etc.

INFINITIVE MOOD

Compound Infinitive	<i>or</i>	Perfect Infinitive
Compound Present Participle	<i>or</i>	Perfect Participle

INDICATIVE MOOD

Tenses :

Compound Present	<i>or</i>	Past Indefinite
Compound Imperfect	<i>or</i>	Pluperfect
Compound Past Definite	<i>or</i>	Past Anterior
Compound Future	<i>or</i>	Future Perfect
Compound Conditional	<i>or</i>	Conditional Past

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Compound Present	<i>or</i>	Past Indefinite
Compound Imperfect (first form)	<i>or</i>	Pluperfect (first form)
Compound Imperfect (second form)	<i>or</i>	Pluperfect (second form)
Compound Future	<i>or</i>	Future Perfect
Compound Conditional	<i>or</i>	Conditional Past

86. COMPOUND TENSES OF THE VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber hablado**, to have spoken.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo hablado**, having spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Compound Present

yo	he hablado	I have spoken
tú	has hablado	thou hast spoken
él	ha hablado	he has spoken
V.	ha hablado	your honor has spoken
nosotros	hemos hablado	we have spoken
vosotros	habéis hablado	ye have spoken
ellos	han hablado	they have spoken
VV.	han hablado	your honors have spoken

Compound Imperfect

yo	había hablado	I had spoken
tú	habías hablado	thou hadst spoken
él	había hablado	he had spoken
V.	había hablado	your honor had spoken
nosotros	habíamos hablado	we had spoken
vosotros	habíais hablado	ye had spoken
ellos	habían hablado	they had spoken
VV.	habían hablado	your honors had spoken

} or used to speak.

Compound Past Definite (when)

yo	hube hablado	I had spoken
tú	hubiste hablado	thou hadst spoken
él	hubo hablado	he had spoken
V.	hubo hablado	your honor had spoken
nosotros	hubimos hablado	we had spoken
vosotros	hubisteis hablado	ye had spoken
ellos	hubieron hablado	they had spoken
VV.	hubieron hablado	your honors had spoken

Compound Future

yo	habré hablado	I shall have spoken
tú	habrás hablado	thou wilt have spoken
él	habrá hablado	he will have spoken
V.	habrá hablado	your honor will have spoken
nosotros	habremos hablado	we shall have spoken
vosotros	habréis hablado	ye will have spoken
ellos	habrán hablado	they will have spoken
VV.	habrán hablado	your honors will have spoken

Compound Conditional (Consequent)

yo	habría hablado	I should have spoken
tú	habrías hablado	thou wouldst have spoken
él	habría hablado	he would have spoken
V.	habría hablado	your honor would have spoken
nosotros	habríamos hablado	we should have spoken
vosotros	habríais hablado	ye would have spoken
ellos	habrían hablado	they would have spoken
VV.	habrían hablado	your honors would have spoken

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Compound Present

yo	haya hablado	that I have spoken	} or may have spoken, etc.
tú	hayas hablado	that thou have spoken	
él	haya hablado	that he have spoken	
V.	haya hablado	that your honor have spoken	
nosotros	hayamos hablado	that we have spoken	
vosotros	hayáis hablado	that ye have spoken	
ellos	hayan hablado	that they have spoken	
VV.	hayan hablado	that your honors have spoken	

Compound Imperfect (First Form)

yo	hubiera hablado	that I should have spoken	} or had spoken, etc.
tú	hubieras hablado	that thou shouldst have spoken	
él	hubiera hablado	that he should have spoken	
V.	hubiera hablado	that your honor should have spoken	
nosotros	hubiéramos hablado	that we should have spoken	
vosotros	hubierais hablado	that ye should have spoken	
ellos	hubieran hablado	that they should have spoken	
VV.	hubieran hablado	that your honors should have spoken	

Compound Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	hubiese hablado	that I had spoken	} should have spoken etc.
tú	hubieses hablado	that thou hadst spoken	
el	hubiese hablado	that he had spoken	
V.	hubiese hablado	that your honor had spoken	
nosotros	hubiésemos hablado	that we had spoken	
vosotros	hubieseis hablado	that ye had spoken	
ellos	hubiesen hablado	that they had spoken	
VV.	hubiesen hablado	that your honors had spoken	

Compound Future

} si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	yo	hubiere hablado	} if, when, while, although, etc.	I have spoken	} or shall have spoken, etc.
	tú	hubieres hablado		thou have spoken	
	él	hubiere hablado		he have spoken	
	V.	hubiere hablado		your honor have spoken	
	nosotros	hubiéremos hablado		we have spoken	
	vosotros	hubiereis hablado		ye have spoken	
	ellos	hubieren hablado		they have spoken	
VV.	hubieren hablado	your honors have spoken			

Compound Conditional (Antecedent)

} si	yo	hubiera	or	hubiese	} hablado	} if	I should have spoken	} or had spoken, etc.
	tú	hubieras	or	hubieses			thou shouldst have spoken	
	él	hubiera	or	hubiese			he should have spoken	
	V.	hubiera	or	hubiese			your honor should have spoken	
	nosotros	hubiéramos	or	hubiésemos			we should have spoken	
	vosotros	hubierais	or	hubieseis			ye should have spoken	
	ellos	hubieran	or	hubiesen			they should have spoken	
VV.	hubieran	or	hubiesen	your honors should have spoken				

THE INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

87. 1. The Spanish verb is conjugated interrogatively in the indicative mood only.

2. To conjugate the verb interrogatively the subject is placed after the verb, and in compound tenses after the past participle. An inverted question-mark stands at the beginning, a direct question-mark at the end of the interrogation.

3. Sometimes in a declarative sentence the subject stands after the verb; but there are then no question-marks, and in conversation the tone of voice indicates the kind of sentence.

4. In interrogative sentences it is customary to use the pronoun subjects, though they may be omitted; when omitted, the interrogation-mark is sufficient.

88. INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE VERB

HABLAR = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

Indicative Mood

PRESENT

¿hablo yo?	do I speak? (am I speaking?)
¿hablas tú?	dost thou speak?
¿habla él?	does he speak?
¿habla V.?	does your honor speak?
¿hablamos nosotros?	do we speak?
¿habláis vosotros?	do ye speak?
¿hablan ellos?	do they speak?
¿hablan VV.?	do your honors speak?

IMPERFECT

¿hablaba yo?	was I speaking? <i>or</i> did I use to speak?
¿hablabas tú?	wast thou speaking? <i>or</i> didst thou use to speak?
¿hablaba él?	was he speaking? <i>or</i> did he use to speak?
¿hablaba V.?	was your honor speaking? <i>or</i> did he use to speak?
¿hablábamos nosotros?	were we speaking? <i>or</i> did we use to speak?
¿hablabais vosotros?	were ye speaking? <i>or</i> did ye use to speak?
¿hablaban ellos?	were they speaking? <i>or</i> did they use to speak?
¿hablaban VV.?	were your honors speaking? <i>or</i> did your honors use to speak?

PAST DEFINITE

¿hablé yo?	did I speak?
¿hablaste tú?	didst thou speak?
¿habló él?	did he speak?

¿habló V.?	did your honor speak?
¿hablamos nosotros	did we speak?
¿hablasteis vosotros	did ye speak?
¿hablaron ellos?	did they speak?
¿hablaron VV.?	did your honors speak?

FUTURE

¿hablaré yo?	shall I speak?
¿hablarás tú?	wilt thou speak?
¿hablará él?	will he speak?
¿hablará V.?	will your honor speak?
¿hablaremos nosotros?	shall we speak?
¿hablaréis vosotros?	will ye speak?
¿hablarán ellos?	will they speak?
¿hablarán VV.?	will your honors speak?

CONDITIONAL (CONSEQUENT)

¿hablaría yo?	should I speak?
¿hablarías tú?	wouldst thou speak?
¿hablaría él?	would he speak?
¿hablaría V.?	would your honor speak?
¿hablaríamos nosotros?	should we speak?
¿hablaríais vosotros?	would ye speak?
¿hablarían ellos?	would they speak?
¿hablarían VV.?	would your honors speak?

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. PRES.	¿he hablado yo? etc.	have I spoken? etc.
COMP. IMP.	¿había hablado yo? etc.	had I spoken? etc.
COMP. PAST DEF.	¿hube hablado yo? etc.	(when) had I spoken? etc.
COMP. FUT.	¿habré hablado yo? etc.	shall I have spoken? etc.
COMP. COND.	¿habría hablado yo? etc.	should I have spoken? etc.

THE NEGATIVE CONJUGATION

89. 1. The Spanish verb is conjugated negatively in all the moods and tenses.

2. To conjugate the verb negatively, the adverb of negation, *no* = not, is placed immediately before the verb in both simple and compound tenses.

3. In the negative of the imperative, second persons singular and plural, instead of prefixing *no* to the affirmative forms, the *no* is prefixed to the second persons singular and plural of the present subjunctive.

90. NEGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **no hablar**, not to speak. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **no hablando**, not speaking. PAST PARTICIPLE: **no hablado**, not spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo **no hablo**
tú **no hablas**
él **no habla**
V. **no habla**
your honor does not speak
we do not speak
vosotros **no hablamos**
ellos **no hablan**
VV. **no hablan**
your honors do not speak

am not speaking,
etc.

Imperfect

yo **no hablaba**
tú **no hablabas**
él **no hablaba**
V. **no hablaba**
your honor was not speaking
we were not speaking
vosotros **no hablabamos**
ellos **no hablaban**
VV. **no hablaban**
your honors were not speaking

or did not use
to speak

Past Definite

yo **no hablé**
tú **no hablaste**
él **no habló**
V. **no habló**
your honor did not speak
we did not speak
vosotros **no hablasteis**
ellos **no hablaron**
VV. **no hablaron**
your honors did not speak

Future

yo **no hablaré**
tú **no hablarás**
él **no hablará**
V. **no hablará**
your honor will not speak
we shall not speak
vosotros **no hablaremos**
ellos **no hablarán**
VV. **no hablarán**
your honors will not speak

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo **no hable**
tú **no hables**
él **no hable**
V. **no hable**
your honor speak not
we speak not
vosotros **no hablémos**
ellos **no hablen**
VV. **no hablen**
that your honors speak not

or may not
speak, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

yo **no hablara**
tú **no hablaras**
él **no hablara**
V. **no hablara**
your honor should not speak
we should not speak
vosotros **no habláramos**
ellos **no hablaran**
VV. **no hablaran**
that your honors should not speak

or spoke not

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo **no hablase**
tú **no hablaras**
él **no hablaras**
V. **no hablase**
your honor spoke not
we spoke not
vosotros **no hablaráseis**
ellos **no hablaran**
VV. **no hablaran**
that your honors spoke not

or should not
speak, etc.

Future

yo **no hablare**
tú **no hablarés**
él **no hablare**
V. **no hablare**
your honor speak not
we speak not
vosotros **no habláremos**
ellos **no hablarán**
VV. **no hablarán**
your honors speak not

or shall not
speak, etc.

If when, while,
although, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

yo **no hablaría** I should not speak
 tú **no hablarías** thou wouldst not speak
 él **no hablaría** he would not speak
 V. **no hablaría** your honor would not speak
 nosotros **no hablaríamos** we should not speak
 vosotros **no hablaríais** ye would not speak
 ellos **no hablarían** they would not speak
 VV. **no hablarían** your honors would not speak

yo **no hablara** or **no hablase**
 tú **no hablaras** or **no hablases**
 él **no hablara** or **no hablases**
 V. **no hablara** or **no hablases**
 si } **no hablaríamos** or **no hablásemos**
 nosotros } **no hablaríamos** or **no hablásemos**
 vosotros } **no hablaríais** or **no hablaríais**
 ellos } **no hablarían** or **no hablarían**
 VV. } **no hablarían** or **no hablarían**

Conditional (Antecedent)

I should not speak
 thou shouldst not speak
 he should not speak
 your honor should not speak
 we should not speak
 ye should not speak
 they should not speak
 your honors should not speak

or spoke not.

IMPERATIVE MOOD

no hables tú speak (thou) not
no habléis vosotros speak (ye) not
no hable yo let me not speak
no hable él let him not speak
no habléis V. let us not speak
no hablémos nosotros let us not speak
no hablen ellos let them not speak
no hablen VV. speak not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **no haber hablado**, not to have spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. yo **no he hablado**, etc. I have not spoken, etc.
 Comp. Imp. yo **no habia hablado**, etc. I had not spoken, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. yo **no hube hablado**, etc. (when) I had not spoken, etc.
 Comp. Fut. yo **no habré hablado**, etc. I shall not have spoken, etc.
 Comp. Cond. yo **no habria hablado**, etc. I should not have spoken, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. yo **no haya hablado**, etc. that I have not *or* may not have spoken, etc.
 Comp. Imp. yo **no hubiera hablado**, etc. that I should not have *or* had not spoken, etc.
 Comp. Imp. yo **no hubiese hablado**, etc. that I had not *or* should not have spoken, etc.
 Comp. Fut. yo **no hubiere hablado**, etc. that I have not *or* shall not have spoken, etc.
 Comp. Cond. yo **no hubiera or hubiese hablado**, etc. that I should not have *or* had not spoken, etc.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **no habiendo hablado**, not having spoken.

Conjugate in the Interrogative and Negative forms:

armar, to arm.
consultar, to consult.
conversar, to converse.
dudar, to doubt.
durar, to last.

fundar, to found.
girar, to turn.
importar, to import.
inclinar, to incline.
inspirar, to inspire.

interesar, to interest.
limitar, to unite.
limitar, to limit.
llevar, to carry.
luchar, to struggle.

molestar, to molest.
pesar, to weigh.
preparar, to prepare.
presentar, to present.
privar, to deprive.

representar, to represent.
separar, to separate.
suspechar, to suspect.
trazar, to draw.
transportar, to transport.

THE NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

91. 1. The Spanish verb is conjugated negatively-interrogatively in the indicative mood only.

2. This conjugation is a direct combination of the interrogative and the negative conjugations. That is, the pronoun subject stands after the verb in both the simple and the compound tenses; the adverb *no* precedes the verb, and the inverted and direct question-marks stand respectively at the beginning and the end of the expression.

In other words, make the verb interrogative and then put *no* before it.

92. NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

Indicative Mood

PRESENT

¿no hablo yo?	do I not speak? (am I not speaking?)
¿no hablas tú?	dost thou not speak?
¿no habla él?	does he not speak?
¿no habla V.?	does your honor not speak?
¿no hablamos nosotros?	do we not speak?
¿no habláis vosotros?	do ye not speak?
¿no hablan ellos?	do they not speak?
¿no hablan VV.?	do your honors not speak?

IMPERFECT

¿no hablaba yo?	was I not speaking? <i>or</i> did I not use to speak?
¿no hablabas tú?	wast thou not speaking? <i>or</i> didst thou not use to speak?
¿no hablaba él?	was he not speaking? <i>or</i> did he not use to speak?
¿no hablaba V.?	was your honor not speaking? <i>or</i> did your honor not use to speak?
¿no hablábamos nosotros?	were we not speaking? <i>or</i> did we not use to speak?
¿no hablabais vosotros?	were ye not speaking? <i>or</i> did ye not use to speak?
¿no hablaban ellos?	were they not speaking? <i>or</i> did they not use to speak?
¿no hablaban VV.?	were your honors not speaking? <i>or</i> did your honors not use to speak?

PAST DEFINITE

¿no hablé yo?	did I not speak?
¿no hablaste tú?	didst thou not speak?
¿no habló él?	did he not speak?
¿no habló V.?	did your honor not speak?
¿no hablamos nosotros?	did we not speak?
¿no hablasteis vosotros?	did ye not speak?
¿no hablaron ellos?	did they not speak?
¿no hablaron VV.?	did your honors not speak?

FUTURE

¿no hablaré yo?	shall I not speak?
¿no hablarás tú?	wilt thou not speak?
¿no hablará él?	will he not speak?
¿no hablará V.?	will your honor not speak?
¿no hablaremos nosotros?	shall we not speak?
¿no hablaréis vosotros?	will ye not speak?
¿no hablarán ellos?	will they not speak?
¿no hablarán VV.?	will your honors not speak?

CONDITIONAL (CONSEQUENT)

¿no hablaría yo?	should I not speak?
¿no hablarías tú?	wouldst thou not speak?
¿no hablaría él?	would he not speak?
¿no hablaría V.?	would your honor not speak?
¿no hablaríamos nosotros?	should we not speak?
¿no hablaríais vosotros?	would ye not speak?
¿no hablarían ellos?	would they not speak?
¿no hablarían VV.?	would your honors not speak?

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. PRES.	¿no he hablado yo? etc.	have I not spoken? etc.
COMP. IMP.	¿no había hablado yo? etc.	had I not spoken? etc.
COMP. PAST DEF.	¿no hube hablado yo? etc.	(when) had I not spoken? etc.
COMP. FUT.	¿no habré hablado yo? etc.	shall I not have spoken? etc.
COMP. COND.	¿no habría hablado yo? etc.	should I not have spoken? etc.

NOTE. — The remark in footnote on p. 26 applies here and in all succeeding verbs. Occasionally the negative-interrogative conjugation should be required.

Conjugate in the negative-interrogative:

disputar, to dispute.
habitar, to inhabit.
librar, to free.

manar, to handle.
mudar, to change.
perfumar, to perfume,

plantar, to plant.
vigilar, to watch over.
votar, to vote.

93. CONJUGATION OF THE MODEL VERB **COMER** = TO EAT

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **comer**, to eat.
INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **comiendo**, eating.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **comido**, eaten.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present
yo **como** I eat (do eat, am eating, etc.)
tú **comes** thou eatest
él **come** he eats
V. **comen** your honor eats
nosotros **comemos** we eat
vosotros **coméis** ye eat
ellos **comen** they eat
VV. **comen** your honors eat

Imperfect
yo **comía** I was eating
tú **comías** thou wast eating
él **comía** he was eating
V. **comían** your honor was eating
nosotros **comíamos** we were eating
vosotros **comíais** ye were eating
ellos **comían** they were eating
VV. **comían** your honors were eating

Past Definite
yo **comí** I ate
tú **comiste** thou didst eat
él **comió** he ate
V. **comió** your honor ate
nosotros **comimos** we ate
vosotros **comistis** ye ate
ellos **comieron** they ate
VV. **comieron** your honors ate

Future
yo **comeré** I shall eat
tú **comerás** thou wilt eat
él **comerá** he will eat
V. **comerá** your honor will eat
nosotros **comeremos** we shall eat
vosotros **comeréis** ye will eat
ellos **comerán** they will eat
VV. **comerán** your honors will eat

NOTE. — **Como**, 1st person singular, present indicative, has the graphic accent to distinguish it from **como** meaning *how*?

yo **coma** that I eat
tú **comas** that thou eat
él **coma** that he eat
V. **coman** that your honor eat
nosotros **comamos** that we eat
vosotros **comáis** that ye eat
ellos **coman** that they eat
VV. **coman** that your honors eat

Imperfect (First Form)
yo **comiera** that I should eat
tú **comieras** that thou shouldst eat
él **comiera** that he should eat
V. **comieran** that your honor should eat
nosotros **comiéramos** that we should eat
vosotros **comierais** that ye should eat
ellos **comieran** that they should eat
VV. **comieran** that your honors should eat

Imperfect (Second Form)
yo **comiese** that I ate
tú **comieses** that thou ate
él **comiese** that he ate
V. **comiesen** that your honor ate
nosotros **comiésemos** that we ate
vosotros **comieseis** that ye ate
ellos **comiesen** that they ate
VV. **comiesen** that your honors ate

Future
yo **comiere** I eat
tú **comieres** thou eat
él **comiere** he eat
V. **comieren** your honor eat
nosotros **comiéremos** we eat
vosotros **comiereis** ye eat
ellos **comieren** they eat
VV. **comieren** your honors eat

The context must distinguish it from **comiere**, when, although, etc.

or may eat, etc.

or ate.

or should eat, etc.

or shall eat, etc.

Future

is, cuando, mien-

tras, aunque, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

yo **comeria** I should eat
 tú **comerías** thou wouldst eat
 él **comería** he would eat
 V. **comería** your honor would eat
 nosotros **comeríamos** we should eat
 vosotros **comeríais** they would eat
 ellos **comerían** your honors would eat
 VV. **comerían**

Conditional (Antecedent)

yo **comiera** or **comiese**
 tú **comieras** or **comieses**
 él **comiera** or **comiese**
 V. **comiera** or **comiese**
 nosotros **comiéramos** or **comiésemos**
 vosotros **comierais** or **comieseis**
 ellos **comieran** or **comiesen**
 VV. **comieran** or **comiesen**

si if

yo should eat
 thou shouldst eat
 he should eat
 your honor should eat
 we should eat
 ye should eat
 they should eat
 your honors should eat

or etc

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

come eat, thou
comed eat, ye

yo let me eat
 tú let him eat
 él let him eat
 V. eat, your honor
 nosotros let us eat
 vosotros let them eat
 ellos eat, your honors
 VV. eat, your honors

no comas tú eat thou not
no comáis vosotros eat ye not

yo let me not eat
 tú let him not eat
 él let him not eat
 V. eat not, your honor
 nosotros let us not eat
 vosotros let them not eat
 ellos eat not, your honors
 VV. eat not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber comido**, to have eaten.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo comido**, having eaten.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. yo **he comido**, etc. I have eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp. yo **había comido**, etc. I had eaten, etc.
Comp. Past Def. yo **hube comido**, etc. (when) I had eaten, etc.
Comp. Fut. yo **habré comido**, etc. I shall have eaten, etc.
Comp. Cond. yo **habría comido**, etc. I should have eaten, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. yo **haya comido**, etc. that I have *or* may have eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp. yo **hubiera comido**, etc. that I should have eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) yo **hubiese comido**, etc. that I had *or* should have eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) yo **hubiese comido**, etc. that I had *or* should have eaten, etc.
Comp. Fut. yo **hubiera comido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have eaten, etc.
Comp. Cond. yo **hubiera o hubiese comido**, etc. that I should have *or* had eaten, etc.

aprender, to learn.
arder, to burn.
beber, to drink.
ceder, to yield.
comprender, to understand.

comprometer, to endanger.
correr, to flow, to run.
coser, to sew.
depender (de), to depend (upon).
emprender, to undertake.

someter, to submit.
sorprender, to overtake.
suspender, to suspend.
temer, to fear.
vender, to sell.

Conjugate in the same manner:

exceder, to exceed.
impeler, to impel.
interceder, to intercede with.
meter (en), to put in.
prometer, to promise

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **vivir**, to live. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **viviendo**, living. PAST PARTICIPLE: **vivido**, lived.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present
yo vivo I live (do live, am living, etc.)
tú vives thou livest
él vive he lives
V. vive your honor lives
nosotros vivimos we live
vosotros vivís ye live
ellos viven they live
VV. viven your honors live

Imperfect
yo vivía I was living
tú vivías thou wast living
él vivía he was living
V. vivía your honor was living
nosotros vivíamos we were living
vosotros vivíais ye were living
ellos vivían they were living
VV. vivían your honors were living

Past Definite
yo viví I lived
tú viviste thou didst live
él vivió he lived
V. vivió your honor lived
nosotros vivimos we lived
vosotros vivisteis ye lived
ellos vivieron they lived
VV. vivieron your honors lived

Future
yo viviré I shall live
tú vivirás thou wilt live
él vivirá he will live
V. vivirá your honor will live
nosotros viviremos we shall live
vosotros viviréis ye will live
ellos vivirán they will live
VV. vivirán your honors will live

Conditional
yo viviría I should live
tú vivirías thou shouldst live
él viviría he should live
V. viviría your honor should live
nosotros viviríamos we should live
vosotros viviríais ye should live
ellos vivirían they should live
VV. vivirían your honors should live

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present
yo viva that I live
tú vivas that thou live
él viva that he live
V. viva that your honor live
nosotros vivamos that we live
vosotros viváis that ye live
ellos vivan that they live
VV. vivan that your honors live

Imperfect (First Form)
yo viviera that I should live
tú vivieras that thou shouldst live
él viviera that he should live
V. viviera that your honor should live
nosotros viviéramos that we should live
vosotros viviérais that ye should live
ellos vivieran that they should live
VV. vivieran that your honors should live

Imperfect (Second Form)
yo viviese that I lived
tú vivieses that thou lived
él viviese that he lived
V. viviese that your honor lived
nosotros viviésemos that we lived
ellos viviesen that they lived
VV. viviesen that your honors lived

Future
yo viviere I live
tú vivieres thou live
él viviere he live
V. viviere your honor live
nosotros viviéremos we live
ellos vivieren they live
VV. vivieren your honors live

Pluperfect
yo viviera if, when, while,
tú vivieras although, etc.
él viviera if, when, while,
V. viviera if, when, while,
nosotros viviéramos if, when, while,
vosotros viviérais if, when, while,
ellos vivieran if, when, while,
VV. vivieran if, when, while,
 si, cuando, men-
 tras, aunque, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

yo **viviera** I should live
 tú **vivieras** thou wouldst live
 él **viviera** he would live
 V. **viviera** your honor would live
 nosotros **viviríamos** we should live
 vosotros **viviríais** they would live
 ellos **vivirían** they would live
 VV. **vivirían** your honors would live

Conditional (Antecedent)

yo **viviera** or **viviese** I should live
 tú **vivieras** or **vivieses** thou shouldst live
 él **viviera** or **viviese** he should live
 V. **viviera** or **viviese** your honor should live
 nosotros **viviríamos** or **viviésemos** if we should live
 vosotros **viviríais** or **viviéseis** ye should live
 ellos **vivirían** or **viviesen** they should live
 VV. **vivirían** or **viviesen** your honors should live

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vive	tú	live, thou	no vivas	tú	live thou not
vivid	vosotros	live, ye	no viváis	vosotros	live ye not
viva	yo	let me live	no viva	yo	let me not live
viva	él	let him live	no viva	él	let him not live
viva	V.	live, your honor	no viva	V.	live not, your honor
vivamos	nosotros	let us live	no vivamos	nosotros	let us not live
vivan	ellos	let them live	no vivan	ellos	let them not live
vivan	VV.	live, your honors	no vivan	VV.	live not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber vivido**, to have lived.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo vivido**, having lived.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he vivido**, etc. I have lived, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia vivido**, etc. I had lived, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo vivido**, etc. (when) I had lived, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré vivido**, etc. I shall have lived, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria vivido**, etc. I should have lived, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya vivido**, etc. that I have, or may have lived, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera vivido**, etc. that I should have, or had lived, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese vivido**, etc. that I had, or should have lived, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere vivido**, etc. that I have, or shall have lived, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese vivido**, etc. that I should have, or had lived, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abrir (*pp.* abierto), to open.
admitir, to admit.
asistir, to be present.
consistir (*en*), to consist (*in*).
 cubrir (*pp.* cubierto), to cover.

interrumpir, to interrupt.
partir, to start.
persuadir, to persuade.
presumir, to presume.

recibir, to receive.
subir, to go up.
sufrir, to suffer, to endure.
unir, to unite.

ORTHOGRAPHIC CHANGES

95. Irregular verbs have been defined to be those which deviate more or less from the model verbs; hence any deviation whatsoever in the form of a verb would make it come under this head.

96. 1. Outside of the Irregular verbs, *it is a rule in Spanish that the stem of the verb throughout maintains the sound of the stem in the infinitive.* Looking back, the student will see this perfectly illustrated in the model verbs, where the stems of the infinitives, *habl-*, *com-*, *viv-*, are constant, *in spelling* as well as *in sound.*

2. But a great number of verbs in Spanish have certain consonants before the endings *ar*, *er* or *ir*, that necessitate a change of spelling to preserve the sound of the infinitive stem before certain other vowel endings; and again, some verbs require a slight change in spelling or accentuation to make them accord with the laws of Spanish orthography: all such verbs are said to undergo *orthographic changes* and are not considered irregular.

97. These orthographic changes are of *regular application* in all verbs *ending* as indicated below, *except* in fourteen. Many verbs *ending* in *iar*, *uar*, are not pronounced with the tonic accent on the weak vowel in tenses indicated. For instance in **estudiar**, the Spaniard says **estudio**, I study; *not estudio*. This, therefore, is not a mechanical rule as are the other thirteen.

98. The following is a tabulated list of the orthographic changes, each of which will be found illustrated in full on the page indicated:

- | | | | | |
|--|---|--|---|---|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Verbs ending in car change c into qu when followed by e (Sacar, p. 42) 2. Verbs ending in gar add u after g when followed by e (Pagar, p. 44) 3. Verbs ending in guar take a diæresis over the u (ü) when followed by e (Averiguar, p. 46) 4. Verbs ending in zar change z into c when followed by e (Lanzar, p. 48) | } viz. in | <table border="0"> <tr> <td style="font-size: 3em; vertical-align: middle;">{</td> <td style="padding-left: 10px;"> Past Definite, 1st
pers. singular.
Pres. Subjunctive
throughout.
Imperat. derived
from Present
Subjunctive. </td> </tr> </table> | { | Past Definite, 1st
pers. singular.
Pres. Subjunctive
throughout.
Imperat. derived
from Present
Subjunctive. |
| { | Past Definite, 1st
pers. singular.
Pres. Subjunctive
throughout.
Imperat. derived
from Present
Subjunctive. | | | |

- | | | |
|--|-------------|--|
| <p>5. Verbs ending in cer preceded by a consonant change c into z when followed by o or a (Vencer, p. 50)</p> <p>6. Verbs ending in cir preceded by a consonant change c into z when followed by o or a (Esparcir, p. 52)</p> <p>7. Verbs ending in ger change g into j when followed by o or a (Coger, p. 54)</p> <p>8. Verbs ending in gir change g into j when followed by o or a (Dirigir, p. 56)</p> <p>9. One verb ending in quir changes qu into c when followed by o or a (Delinquir, p. 58)</p> <p>10. Verbs ending in guir drop u when followed by o or a (Distinguir, p. 60)</p> | } viz. in { | <p>Pres. Indicative, 1st pers. sing.
Pres. Subjunctive throughout.
Imperat. derived from Present Subjunctive.</p> |
| <p>11. Verbs ending in llir drop i of termination when followed by ó or e (Mullir, p. 62)</p> <p>12. Verbs ending in ñir drop i of termination when followed by ó or e (Bruñir, p. 64)</p> <p>REMARK: The verb Tañer drops i of the termination when followed by ó or e (Tañer p. 66).
The verbs Henchir and Reenchir do not uniformly drop i of termination before ó or e.</p> <p>13. Verbs ending in eer, uir, change the i of the diphthongal endings ie and ió into y, since Spanish orthography does not permit <i>unaccented i</i> to stand between two vowels (Creer, p. 68)</p> | } viz. in { | <p>Pres. Participle.
Past Definite, 3d pers. sing. and plural.
Imperfect Subj. (first form) throughout.
Imperfect Subj. (second form) throughout.
Fut. Subjunctive throughout.
Conditional Subj. throughout.</p> |
| <p>14. Verbs ending in iar, uar, require a <i>written</i> accent over these weak vowels (i, u) whenever <i>they</i> receive the <i>tonic</i> accent (Continuar, p. 70)</p> | } viz. in { | <p>Pres. Ind., 1st, 2d, 3d sing., 3d plural.
Pres. Subj., 1st 2d, 3d sing., 3d plural.
Impera. 2d pers. sing. and forms derived from Pres. Subj., except 1st pers. plural.</p> |

99. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SACAR = TO TAKE OUT, REMOVE. SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **sacar**, to take out. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sacando**, taking out. PAST PARTICIPLE: **sacado**, taken out.
INDICATIVE MOOD SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present
I take out (do take out, am taking out)
thou takest out
he takes out
your honor takes out
we take out
ye take out
they take out
your honors take out

Imperfect
I was taking out
thou wast taking out
he was taking out
your honor was taking out
we were taking out
ye were taking out
they were taking out
your honors were taking out

Past Definite
I took out
thou didst take out
he took out
your honor took out
we took out
ye took out
they took out
your honors took out

Future
I shall take out
thou wilt take out
he will take out
your honor will take out
we shall take out
ye will take out
they will take out
your honors will take out

Present
that I take out
that thou take out
that he take out
that your honor take out
that we take out
that ye take out
that they take out
that your honors take out

Imperfect (First Form)
that I should take out
that thou should'st take out
that he should take out
that your honor should take out
that we should take out
that ye should take out
that they should take out
that your honors should take out

Imperfect (Second Form)
that I took out
that thou took out
that he took out
that your honor took out
that we took out
that ye took out
that they took out
that your honors took out

Future
I take out
thou take out
he take out
your honor take out
we take out
ye take out
they take out
your honors take out

or used to take out.

SACAR

or may take out, etc.

or took out.

or should take out, etc.

or shall take out, etc.

si, cuando, mien-
tras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while,
although, etc.

Conditioinal (Consequent)

sacaria	I should take out
sacarias	thou wouldst take out
sacaria	he would take out
sacarias	your honor would take out
sacariamios	we should take out
sacarias	they would take out
sacarian	your honors would take out
VV. sacarian	

si

or
sacaria
sacarias
 or
sacaria
 or
sacaria
 or
sacariamios
 or
sacarias
 or
sacarian
 or
VV. sacarian

Conditioinal (Antecedent)

sacase	I should take out
sacases	thou shouldst take out
sacase	he should take out
sacases	your honor should take out
sacasemos	we should take out
sacases	ye should take out
sacasen	they should take out
VV. sacasen	your honors should take out

or took out.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

saca	take (thou) out
sacad	take (ye) out
sague	let me take out
sague	let him take out
sague V.	take out, your honor
saguenemos	let us take out
saguen	let them take out
saguen VV.	take out, your honors

no saques	take (thou) not out
no saquesis	take (ye) not out
no saque	let me not take out
no saque	let him not take out
no saque V.	take not out, your honor
no saquemos	let us not take out
no saquen	let them not take out
no saquen VV.	take not out, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **car** change **c** into **qu** when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sacado**, to have taken out.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sacado**, having taken out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	he sacado , etc.	I have taken out, etc.
Comp. Imp.	haya sacado , etc.	I had taken out, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	hubie sacado , etc.	(when) I had taken out, etc.
Comp. Fut.	habré sacado , etc.	I shall have taken out, etc.
Comp. Cond.	habría sacado , etc.	I should have taken out, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aplicar, to apply.
dedicar, to dedicate.
embarcar, to embark.
fabricar, to manufacture.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya sacado , etc.	that I have, or may have taken out, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiera sacado , etc.	that I should have, or had taken out, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese sacado , etc.	that I had, or should have taken out, etc.
Comp. Fut.	hubiera or hubiese sacado , etc.	that I have, or shall have taken out, etc.
Comp. Cond.	hubiera or hubiese sacado , etc.	that I should have, or had taken out, etc.

pecar, to sin.
picar, to prick.
suplicar, to entreat.
tocar, to touch.

100. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB PAGAR = TO PAY.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **pagar**, to pay. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **pagando**, paying. PAST PARTICIPLE: **pagado**, paid.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

pago I pay (do pay, am paying, etc.)

pagas thou payest

paga he pays

pagamos we pay

pagáis ye pay

pagan they pay

pagan your honors pay

Imperfect

pagaba I was paying

pagabas thou wast paying

pagaba he was paying

pagamos your honor was paying

pagabais we were paying

pagaban they were paying

pagaban your honors were paying

or used to pay.

Past Definite

pagué I paid

pagaste thou didst pay

pagó he paid

pagamos your honor paid

pagasteis we paid

pagaron ye paid

pagaron they paid

pagaron your honors paid

Future

pagaré I shall pay

pagarás thou wilt pay

pagará he will pay

pagaremos you honor will pay

pagaréis we shall pay

pagarán ye will pay

pagarán they will pay

pagarán your honors will pay

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

pague that I pay

pagues that thou pay

pague that he pay

pague that your honor pay

paguemos that we pay

paguéis that ye pay

paguen that they pay

paguen that your honors pay

Imperfect (First Form)

pagara that I should pay

pagaras that thou shouldst pay

pagara that he should pay

pagara that your honor should pay

pagáramos that we should pay

pagárais that ye should pay

pagaran that they should pay

pagaran that your honors should pay

Imperfect (Second Form)

pagase that I paid

pagases that thou paid

pagase that he paid

pagase that your honor paid

pagásemos that we paid

pagáseis that ye paid

pagasen that they paid

pagasen that your honors paid

Future

pagare I pay

pagares thou pay

pagare he pay

pagare your honor pay

pagáremos we pay

pagaréis ye pay

pagaren they pay

pagaren your honors pay

if, when, while,

although, etc.

pagare if, when, while,

pagares although, etc.

pagare if, when, while,

pagáremos although, etc.

pagaréis if, when, while,

pagaren although, etc.

pagare si, cuando, when,

pagares si, cuando, when,

pagare si, cuando, when,

pagáremos si, cuando, when,

pagaréis si, cuando, when,

pagaren si, cuando, when,

pagaren si, cuando, when,

or may pay,

or paid,

or should pay,

or shall pay, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

pagaria I should pay
pagarias thou wouldst pay
pagaria he would pay
pagaria your honor would pay
pagáramos we should pay
pagárais ye would pay
pagarian they would pay
VV. pagarian your honors would pay

Conditional (Antecedent)

si pagara pagaras pagara pagáramos pagárais pagarian VV. pagarian	or pagase pagases pagase pagásemos pagásetsi pagasen VV. pagasen	if I should pay thou shouldst pay he should pay your honor should pay we should pay ye should pay they should pay your honors should pay
---	--	--

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

paga pagad	pay (thou) pay (ye)	no pagues no paguéis	pay (thou) not pay (ye) not
pague pague pague V. paguemos paguen paguen VV.	let me pay let him pay pay, your honor let us pay let them pay pay, your honors	no pague no pague no pague V. no paguemos no paguen no paguen VV.	let me not pay let him not pay pay not, your honor let us not pay let them not pay pay not, your honors

NOTE.— Verbs ending in **gar** add **u** after **g**, when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber pagado**, to have paid.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he pagado**, etc. I have paid, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia pagado**, etc. I had paid, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubie pagado**, etc. (when I had paid, etc.)
 Comp. Fut. **habré pagado**, etc. I shall have paid, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria pagado**, etc. I should have paid, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo pagado**, having paid.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya pagado**, etc. that I have or may have paid, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera pagado**, etc. that I should have or had paid, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiere pagado**, etc. that I had or should have paid, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiera or hubiese pagado**, etc. that I have or shall have paid, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese pagado**, etc. that I should have or had paid, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abogar, to advocate.
ahogar, to throttle.

luzgar, to judge.
ligar, to bind.

pegar, to chastise.
vagar, to wander.

paid 40

101. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB AVERIGUAR = TO ASCERTAIN, INVESTIGATE.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **averiguar**, to ascertain. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **averiguando**, ascertaining.

PAST PARTICIPLE. **averiguado**, ascertained.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

averiguo I ascertain (do ascertain, am ascertaining)
averiguas thou ascertainest
averigua he ascertainment
 V. **averiguamos** your honor ascertainment
averiguais we ascertain
averiguan ye ascertain
 VV. **averiguan** your honors ascertain

Imperfect

averiguaba I was ascertaining
averiguabas thou wast ascertaining
averiguaba he was ascertaining
 V. **averiguabamos** your honor was ascertaining
averiguabais ye were ascertaining
averiguaban they were ascertaining
 VV. **averiguaban** your honors were ascertaining

Past Definite

averigué I ascertained
averiguaste thou didst ascertain
averiguó he ascertained
 V. **averiguamos** your honor ascertained
averiguasteis ye ascertained
averiguaron they ascertained
 VV. **averiguaron** your honors ascertained

Future

averiguaré I shall ascertain
averiguarás thou wilt ascertain
averiguará he will ascertain
 V. **averiguarémos** your honor will ascertain
averiguaréis ye will ascertain
averiguarán they will ascertain
 VV. **averiguarán** your honors will ascertain

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

averigüe that I ascertain
averigües that thou ascertain
averigüe that he ascertain
 V. **averigüemos** that your honor ascertain
averigüéis that we ascertain
averigüen that ye ascertain
 VV. **averigüen** that your honors ascertain

Imperfect (First Form)

averiguara that I should ascertain
averiguaras that thou shouldst ascertain
averiguara that he should ascertain
 V. **averiguáramos** that your honor should ascertain
averiguárais that we should ascertain
averiguáran that ye should ascertain
 VV. **averiguáran** that your honors should ascertain

Imperfect (Second Form)

averiguase that I ascertained
averiguases that thou ascertained
averiguase that he ascertained
 V. **averiguásemos** that your honor ascertained
averiguáseis that ye ascertained
averiguásen that they ascertained
 VV. **averiguásen** that your honors ascertained

Future

averiguare I ascertain
averiguares thou ascertain
averiguare he ascertain
 V. **averiguáremos** your honor ascertain
averiguáreis we ascertain
averiguáren ye ascertain
 VV. **averiguáren** they ascertain
 if, when, while, although, etc.

or used to ascertain

AVERIGUAR

or should ascertain

or shall ascertain

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

averiguaría I should ascertain
averiguarías thou wouldst ascertain
averiguaría he would ascertain
averiguaría your honor would ascertain
averiguaríamos we should ascertain
averiguaríamos ye would ascertain
averiguarían they would ascertain
averiguarían your honors would ascertain

si

averiguara or **averiguase**
averiguaras or **averiguases**
averiguara or **averiguase**
averiguara or **averiguase**
averiguáramos or **averiguásemos**
averiguáramos or **averiguásemos**
averiguáran or **averiguásen**
averiguáran or **averiguásen**

40 ascertained.

Conditional (Antecedent)

I should ascertain
 thou shouldst ascertain
 he should ascertain
 your honor should ascertain
 we should ascertain
 ye should ascertain
 they should ascertain
 your honors should ascertain

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

averigua ascertain (thou)
averigua ascertain (ye)
averigúete let me ascertain
averigúete let him ascertain
averigúete V. ascertain, your honor
averigúémos let us ascertain
averigúén let them ascertain
averigúén VV. ascertain, your honors

no averigúes ascertain (thou) not
no averigúéis ascertain (ye) not
no averigúete let me not ascertain
no averigúete let him not ascertain
no averigúete V. ascertain not, your honor
no averigúémos let us not ascertain
no averigúén let them not ascertain
no averigúén VV. ascertain not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **guar** take a diæresis over the **u** when followed by *e*, *viz.*, in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber averiguado**, to have ascertained.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo averiguado**, having ascertained.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he averiguado**, etc. I have ascertained, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había averiguado**, etc. I had ascertained, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo averiguado**, etc. (when) I had ascertained, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré averiguado**, etc. I shall have ascertained, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría averiguado**, etc. I should have ascertained, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya averiguado, etc. that I have, or may have ascertained, etc.
hubiera averiguado, etc. that I should have, or had ascertained, etc.
hubiese averiguado, etc. that I had, or should have ascertained, etc.
hubiere averiguado, etc. that I have, or shall have ascertained, etc.
hubiera or hubiese averiguado, etc. that I should have, or had ascertained, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aguar, to mix with water.
amortiguar, to dull, to mortify.

atestiguar, to testify
desmenguar, to lessen.

fraguar, to forge.
menguar, to decay.

santiguar, to bless.
sobreguar, to float in water.

102. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB LANZAR = TO DART, THROW

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **lanzar**, to dart.PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **lanzando**, darting.PAST PARTICIPLE: **lanzado**, darted.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

lanzo I dart (do dart, am darting)
lanzas thou darst
lanza he darts
lanza your honor darts
 V. **lanzamos** we dart
lanzáis ye dart
lanzan they dart
 VV. **lanzan** your honors dart

Imperfect

lanzaba I was darting
lanzabas thou wast darting
lanzaba he was darting
lanzaba your honor was darting
 V. **lanzábamos** we were darting
lanzabais ye were darting
lanzaban they were darting
 VV. **lanzaban** your honors were darting

Past Definite

lanzé I darted
lanzaste thou didst dart
lanzó he darted
lanzó your honor darted
 V. **lanzamos** we darted
lanzasteis ye darted
lanzaron they darted
 VV. **lanzaron** your honors darted

Future

lanzaré I shall dart
lanzarás thou wilt dart
lanzará he will dart
lanzará your honor will dart
 V. **lanzaremos** we shall dart
lanzaréis ye will dart
lanzarán they will dart
 VV. **lanzarán** your honors will dart

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

lanze that I dart
lances that thou dart
lanze that he dart
lanze that your honor dart
 V. **lanzemos** that we dart
lanzáis that ye dart
lanzen that they dart
 VV. **lanzen** that your honors dart

Imperfect (First Form)

lanzara that I should dart
lanzaras that thou shouldst dart
lanzara that he should dart
lanzara that your honor should dart
 V. **lanzáramos** that we should dart
lanzárais that ye should dart
lanzaran that they should dart
 VV. **lanzaran** that your honors should dart

Imperfect (Second Form)

lanzase that I darted
lanzases that thou darted
lanzase that he darted
lanzase that your honors darted
 V. **lanzásemos** that we darted
lanzáseis that ye darted
lanzassen that they darted
 VV. **lanzassen** that your honors darted

Future

lanzare I shall
lanzarés thou shalt
lanzare he shall
lanzare your honor shall
 V. **lanzaremos** we shall
lanzaréis ye shall
lanzarán they shall
 VV. **lanzarán** your honors shall

Conditional (Consequent)

lanzaría I should dart
lanzarías thou wouldst dart
lanzaría he would dart
lanzaría your honor would dart
 V. **lanzaríamos** we should dart
lanzaríamos ye would dart
lanzarían they would dart
lanzarían your honors would dart
 VV. **lanzarían**

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	V.	lanzara	or	lanzase	I should dart
		lanzaras	or	lanzases		thou shouldst dart
	VV.	lanzara	or	lanzase	he should dart
		lanzaras	or	lanzases		your honor should dart
	V.	lanzaramos	or	lanzásemos	if
		lanzaramos	or	lanzásemos		we should dart
	VV.	lanzaran	or	lanzasen	ye should dart
		lanzaran	or	lanzasen		they should dart
		lanzaran	or	lanzasen	your honors should dart

or danted.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

lanza	dart (thou)	no lancés	dart (thou) not
lanzad	dart (ye)	no lancéis	dart (ye) not
lan·e	let me dart	no lan·e	let me not dart
lan·e	let him dart	no lan·e	let him not dart
lan·e V.	dart, your honor	no lan·e V.	dart not, your honor
lan·emos	let us dart	no lancemos	let us not dart
lan·en	let them dart	no lancen	let them not dart
lan·en VV.	dart, your honors	no lancen VV.	dart not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **zar** change **z** into **c** when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. This change is required by Spanish orthography, which employs **c** before **e** and **i**, and **z** before **a**, **o**, **u**, to give the **th** sound. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber lanzado**, to have darted.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he lanzado**, etc. I have darted, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia lanzado**, etc. I had darted, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo lanzado**, etc. (when) I had darted, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré lanzado**, etc. I shall have darted, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria lanzado**, etc. I should have darted, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo lanzado**, having darted.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya lanzado**, etc. that I have, or may have darted, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera lanzado**, etc. that I should have, or had darted, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese lanzado**, etc. that I had, or should have darted, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere lanzado**, etc. that I have, or shall have darted, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese lanzado** that I should have, or had darted, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

alcanzar, to reach. **descabezar**, to behead. **profetizar**, to prophesy.
caizar, to put on sites. **destriزار**, to crumble. **gozar**, to enjoy. **utilizar**, to utilize.

103. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB VENCER = TO OVERCOME

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **vencer**, to overcome. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **venciendo**, overcoming. PAST PARTICIPLE: **vencido**, overcome.

INDICATIVE, MOOD

Present

I overcome (do overcome, am overcoming)

thou overcomest
 he overcomes
 your honor overcomes
 we overcome
 ye overcome
 they overcome
 your honors overcome

Imperfect

I was overcoming
 thou wast overcoming
 he was overcoming
 your honor was overcoming
 we were overcoming
 ye were overcoming
 they were overcoming
 your honors were overcoming

Past Definite

I overcame
 thou overcamest
 he overcame
 your honor overcame
 we overcame
 ye overcame
 they overcame
 your honors overcame

Future

I shall overcome
 thou wilt overcome
 he will overcome
 your honor will overcome
 we shall overcome
 ye will overcome
 they will overcome
 your honors will overcome

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I overcome
 that thou overcome
 that he overcome
 that your honor overcome
 that we overcome
 that ye overcome
 that they overcome
 that your honors overcome

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should overcome
 that thou shouldst overcome
 that he should overcome
 that your honor should overcome
 that we should overcome
 that ye should overcome
 that they should overcome
 that your honors should overcome

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I overcome
 that thou overcome
 that he overcome
 that your honor overcome
 that we overcome
 that ye overcome
 that they overcome
 that your honors overcome

Future

I overcome
 thou overcome
 he overcome
 your honor overcome
 we overcome
 ye overcome
 they overcome
 your honors overcome

or may over-
 come, etc.

or overcome.

or should over-
 come, etc.

or shall over-
 come.

venc-a
venc-as
venc-a
venc-amos
venc-is
venc-an

venciera
vencieras
venciera
vencieramos
vencierais
vencieran

venciese
vencieses
venciese
venciesemos
vencieseis
venciesen

venciere
vencieres
venciere
vencieremos
vencierais
vencieren

or used to over-
 come.

st, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

It, when, while,
 although, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

venciera I should overcome
vencieras thou wouldst overcome
venciera he would overcome
venciera your honor would overcome
vencieramos we should overcome
vencieras they would overcome
vencieran your honors would overcome
VV. vencieran

Conditional (Antecedent)

venciera or **venciese** I should overcome
vencieras or **vencieses** thou wouldst overcome
venciera or **venciese** he should overcome
venciera or **venciese** your honor should overcome
vencieramos or **vencierásemos** if we should overcome
vencieras or **vencieráseis** if ye should overcome
vencieran or **venciesen** they should overcome
VV. vencieran or **venciesen** your honors should overcome

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vence overcome (thou)
venced overcome (ye)
venza let me overcome
venza let him overcome
venza overcome, your honor
venzamos let us overcome
venzan let them overcome
venzan VV. overcome, your honors

no venzas overcome (thou) not
no venzáis overcome (ye) not
no venza let me not overcome
no venza let him not overcome
no venza overcome not, your honor
no venzamos let us not overcome
no venzan let them not overcome
no venzan VV. overcome not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **cer** preceded by a consonant change **c** into **z** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in Italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber vencido**, to have overcome. COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo vencido**, having overcome.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he vencido**, etc. I have overcome, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia vencido**, etc. I had overcome, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hube vencido**, etc. (when) I had overcome, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré vencido**, etc. I shall have overcome, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria vencido**, etc. I should have overcome, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya vencido**, etc. that I have *or* may have overcome, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese vencido**, etc. that I should have *or* had overcome, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera vencido**, etc. that I had *or* should have overcome, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere vencido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have overcome, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese** that I should have *or* had overcome, etc.
vencido

Conjugate in the same manner:

* **destorcer**, to untwist. * **torcer**, to twist.
 * **retorcer**, to twist again.

* These verbs also belong to the first class of irregular verbs, viz., those that change **o** to **ue** whenever **o** gets the tonic accent.

104. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ESPARCIR** = TO SCATTER

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **esparcir**, to scatter. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **esparciendo**, scattering. PAST PARTICIPLE: **esparcido**, scattered.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I scatter (do scatter, am scattering)

esparco
esparces
esparce
esparce
esparcimos
esparcis
esparcen
esparcen

thou scatterest
he scatters
your honor scatters
we scatter
ye scatter
they scatter
your honors scatter

espara
espara
espara
espara
espara
espara
espara

that I scatter
that thou scatter
that he scatter
that your honor scatter
that we scatter
that ye scatter
that they scatter
that your honors scatter

or may scatter.

Imperfect

I was scattering
thou wast scattering
he was scattering
your honor was scattering
we were scattering
ye were scattering
they were scattering
your honors were scattering

esparcía
esparcias
esparcia
esparcia
esparcíamos
esparciais
esparcian
esparcian

or used to scatter.

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should scatter
that thou shouldst scatter
that he should scatter
that your honor should scatter
that we should scatter
that ye should scatter
that they should scatter
that your honors should scatter

esparciera
esparciera
esparciera
esparciera
esparcíamos
esparciais
esparcieran
esparcieran

or scattered.

Past Definite

I scattered
thou didst scatter
he scattered
your honor scattered
we scattered
ye scattered
they scattered
your honors scattered

esparcí
esparciste
esparció
esparció
esparcimos
esparcisteis
esparcieron
esparcieron

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I scattered
that thou scattered
that he scattered
that your honor scattered
that we scattered
that ye scattered
that they scattered
that your honors scattered

esparciese
esparciese
esparciese
esparciese
esparciesemos
esparcieseis
esparciesen
esparciesen

or should scatter.

Future

I shall scatter
thou wilt scatter
he will scatter
your honor will scatter
we shall scatter
ye will scatter
they will scatter
your honors will scatter

esparciré
esparcirás
esparcirá
esparcirá
esparciremos
esparciréis
esparcirán
esparcirán

Future

I shall scatter
thou shalt scatter
he shall scatter
we shall scatter
ye shall scatter
they shall scatter
your honors shall scatter

esparciere
esparciere
esparciere
esparciere
esparciéremos
esparciereis
esparcieren
esparcieren

si, cuando, when, etc.

or shall scatter.

ESPARCIR

Conditional (Consequent)

esparciria I should scatter
esparcirias thou wouldst scatter
esparciria he would scatter
esparcirias your honor would scatter
esparciriamos we should scatter
esparciriais ye would scatter
esparcirian they would scatter
esparcirian your honors would scatter

Conditional (Antecedent)

si { **esparciera** or **esparciese** I should scatter
esparciera or **esparcieses** thou shouldst scatter
esparciera or **esparciese** he should scatter
esparciera or **esparciese** your honor should scatter
esparcieramos or **esparciesemos** if we should scatter
esparcierais or **esparcieseis** ye should scatter
esparcieran or **esparciesen** they should scatter
esparcieran or **esparciesen** your honors should scatter

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

esparce scatter (thou)	no esparzas scatter (thou) not
esparcid scatter (ye)	no esparzais scatter (ye) not
esparza let me scatter	no esparza let me not scatter
esparza let him scatter	no esparza let him not scatter
esparza V. scatter, your honor	no esparza V. scatter not, your honor
esparzamos let us scatter	no esparzamos let us not scatter
esparzan let them scatter	no esparzan let them not scatter
esparzan VV. scatter, your honors	no esparzan VV. scatter not, your honors

NOTE.—Verbs ending in **cir** preceded by a consonant change **c** into **z** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber esparcido**, to have scattered.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo esparcido**, having scattered.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he esparcido**, etc. I have scattered, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia esparcido**, etc. I had scattered, etc.
 Comp. Past. Def. **hubo esparcido**, etc. (when) I had scattered, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré esparcido**, etc. I shall have scattered, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria esparcido**, etc. I should have scattered, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya esparcido**, etc. that I have *or* may have scattered, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera esparcido**, etc. that I should have *or* had scattered, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese esparcido**, etc. that I had *or* should have scattered, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere esparcido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have scattered, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera *or* hubiese esparcido**, etc. that I should have *or* had scattered, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desuncir, to unyoke. **fruncir**, to gather into plaits.

resarcir, to compensate.

uncir, to yoke.

zurcir, to darn.

105. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB COGER = TO GATHER

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **coger**, to gather.PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **cogiendo**, gathering.PAST PARTICIPLE: **cogido**, gathered.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

co/o	I gather (do gather, am gathering)
coges	thou gatherest
coge	he gathers
V. coge	your honor gathers
cogemos	we gather
cogéis	ye gather
cogen	they gather
VV. cogen	your honors gather

Imperfect

cogia	I was gathering
cogias	thou wast gathering
cogia	he was gathering
V. cogia	your honor was gathering
cogiamos	we were gathering
cogiais	ye were gathering
cogian	they were gathering
VV. cogian	your honors were gathering

Past Definite

cogí	I gathered
cogiste	thou didst gather
cogió	he gathered
V. cogió	your honor gathered
cogimos	we gathered
cogistéis	ye gathered
cogieron	they gathered
VV. cogieron	your honors gathered

Future

cogeré	I shall gather
cogerás	thou wilt gather
cogerá	he will gather
V. cogerá	your honor will gather
cogeremos	we shall gather
cogeréis	ye will gather
cogerán	they will gather
VV. cogerán	your honors will gather

Present

co/a	that I gather
co/as	that thou gather
co/a	that he gather
V. co/a	that your honor gather
co/amos	that we gather
co/áis	that ye gather
co/an	that they gather
VV. co/an	that your honors gather

Imperfect (First Form)

cogiera	that I should gather
cogieras	that thou shouldst gather
cogiera	that he should gather
V. cogiera	that your honor should gather
cogiéramos	that we should gather
cogierais	that ye should gather
VV. cogieran	that they should gather
	that your honors should gather

Imperfect (Second Form)

cogiese	that I gathered
cogieses	that thou gathered
cogiese	that he gathered
V. cogiese	that your honor gathered
cogiésemos	that we gathered
cogieséis	that ye gathered
VV. cogiesen	that they gathered
	that your honors gathered

Future

cogiere	I gather
cogieres	thou gather
cogiere	he gather
V. cogiere	your honor gather
cogieremos	we gather
cogieren	ye gather
VV. cogieren	they gather
	your honors gather

or may gather,

or gathered.

or should gather,

or shall gather,

or used to gather.

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while, although, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

cogeria I should gather
cogerias thou wouldst gather
cogeria he would gather
cogeria your honor would gather
V. cogieramos we should gather
cogierais ye would gather
cogieran they would gather
VV. cogieran your honors would gather

Conditional (Antecedent)

si **cogiera** or **cogiese** I should gather
cogieras or **cogieses** thou shouldst gather
cogiera or **cogiese** he should gather
V. cogieramos or **cogiesemos** if your honor should gather
cogierais or **cogieserais** we should gather
cogieran or **cogiesen** they should gather
VV. cogieran or **VV. cogiesen** your honors should gather
 or gathered.

IMPERATIVE, MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

coge	gather (thou)	no cog/as	gather (thou) not
coged	gather (ye)	no cog/als	gather (ye) not
co/a	let me gather	no co/a	let me not gather
co/a	let him gather	no co/a	let him not gather
co/a V.	gather your honor	no co/a V.	gather not, your honor
cog/amos	let us gather	no cog/amos	let us not gather
co/an	let them gather	no co/an	let them not gather
co/an VV.	gather, your honors	no co/an VV.	gather not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **ger** change **g** into **j** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber cogido**, to have gathered. COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo cogido**, having gathered

Indicative Mood

Comp. Pres. **he cogido**, etc. I have gathered, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia cogido**, etc. (when) I had gathered, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo cogido**, etc. I shall have gathered, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habr  cogido**, etc. I should have gathered, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria cogido**, etc. I should have gathered, etc.

Subjunctive Mood

Comp. Pres. **haya cogido**, etc. that I have or may have gathered, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera cogido**, etc. that I should have or had gathered, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese cogido**, etc. that I had or should have gathered, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere cogido**, etc. that I have or shall have gathered, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese cogido** that I should have or had gathered, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

absterges, to cleanse. **acoger**, to receive into one's house. **antecoger**, to bring before one. **escoger**, to choose. **proteger**, to protect.
recoger, to take back. **teger**, to weave cloth.

106. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DIRIGIR** = TO GUIDE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **dirigir**, to guide,PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **dirigiendo**, guiding.PAST PARTICIPLE: **dirigido**, guided.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

dirjo
diriges
dirige
 V. **dirigimos**
dirigis
dirigen
 VV. **dirigen**

I guide (do guide, am guiding)
 thou guidest
 he guides
 your honor guides
 we guide
 ye guide
 they guide
 your honors guide

Imperfect

dirigia
dirigias
dirigia
 V. **dirigiamos**
dirigiais
dirigian
 VV. **dirigian**

I was guiding
 thou wast guiding
 he was guiding
 your honor was guiding
 we were guiding
 ye were guiding
 they were guiding
 your honors were guiding

} used to guide.

Past Definite

dirigi
dirigiste
dirigio
 V. **dirigimos**
dirigistis
dirigieron
 VV. **dirigieron**

I guided
 thou didst guide
 he guided
 your honor guided
 we guided
 ye guided
 they guided
 your honors guided

Future

dirigiré
dirigirás
dirigirá
 V. **dirigiremos**
dirigiréis
dirigirán
 VV. **dirigirán**

I shall guide
 thou wilt guide
 he will guide
 your honor will guide
 we shall guide
 ye will guide
 they will guide
 your honors will guide

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

dirja
dirjas
dirja
 V. **dirjamos**
dirjais
dirjan
 VV. **dirjan**

that I guide
 that thou guide
 that he guide
 that your honor guide
 that we guide
 that ye guide
 that they guide
 that your honors guide

Imperfect (First Form)

dirigiera
dirigieras
dirigiera
 V. **dirigiéramos**
dirigierais
dirigieran
 VV. **dirigieran**

that I should guide
 that thou shouldst guide
 that he should guide
 that your honor should guide
 that we should guide
 that ye should guide
 that they should guide
 that your honors should guide

Imperfect (Second Form)

dirigiese
dirigieses
dirigiese
 V. **dirigiesemos**
dirigieseis
dirigiesen
 VV. **dirigiesen**

that I guided
 that thou guided
 that he guided
 that your honor guided
 that we guided
 that ye guided
 that they guided
 that your honors guided

Future

dirigiere
dirigieres
dirigiere
 V. **dirigieremos**
dirigieréis
dirigieran
 VV. **dirigieran**

I guide
 thou guide
 he guide
 your honor guide
 we guide
 ye guide
 they guide
 your honors guide

} if, when, while, although, etc.

} or shall guide, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

dirigiria
dirigiriamos
 V. **dirigiria**
dirigiriamos
dirigirian
 VV. **dirigirian**

I should guide
 thou wouldst guide
 he would guide
 your honor would guide
 we should guide
 they would guide
 your honors would guide

Conditional (Antecedent)

si { **dirigiera** or **dirigiese**
dirigieras or **dirigieses**
dirigiera or **dirigiese**
dirigieramos or **dirigiesemos**
dirigierais or **dirigiesais**
dirigieran or **dirigiesen**
 VV. **dirigieran** or VV. **dirigiesen**

if { I should guide
 thou shouldst guide
 he should guide
 your honor should guide
 we should guide
 ye should guide
 they should guide
 your honors should guide

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p>dirige dirige dirig/a dirig/a dirig/a V. dirig/amos dirig/an dirig/an VV.</p>	<p>guide (thou) guide (ye) let me guide let him guide guide, your honor let us guide let them guide guide, your honors</p>	<p>no dirig/as no dirig/ais no dirig/a no dirig/a no dirig/amos no dirig/an no dirig/an VV.</p>	<p>guide (thou) not guide (ye) not let me not guide let him not guide guide not, your honor let us not guide let them not guide guide not, your honors</p>
---	---	--	---

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **gir** change **g** into **j** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber dirigido**, to have guided.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo dirigido**, having guided.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he dirigido**, etc. I have guided, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia dirigido**, etc. I had guided, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubie dirigido**, etc. (when) I had guided, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habre dirigido**, etc. I shall have guided, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria dirigido**, etc. I should have guided, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya dirigido**, etc. that I have *or* may have guided, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera dirigido**, etc. that I should have *or* had guided, etc.
 Comp. Imp (2d form) **hubiese dirigido**, etc. that I had *or* should have guided, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere dirigido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have guided, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese dirigido**, etc. that I should have *or* had guided, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aflegir, to afflict.
colegir, to collect.
corregir, to correct.
elegir, to elect.

regir, to rule.
rugir, to roar.

surgir, to surge.
urgir, to urge.

107. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB DELINQUIR = TO TRANSGRESS (LAW)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **delinquir**, to transgress. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **delinquiendo**, transgressing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **delinquito**, transgressed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I transgress (do transgress, am transgressing)
 thou transgresses
 he transgresses
 your honor transgresses
 we transgress
 ye transgress
 they transgress
 your honors transgress

or may transgress, etc.

Present

that I transgress
 that thou transgress
 that he transgress
 that your honor transgress
 that we transgress
 that ye transgress
 that they transgress
 that your honors transgress

Imperfect

I was transgressing
 thou wast transgressing
 he was transgressing
 your honor was transgressing
 we were transgressing
 ye were transgressing
 they were transgressing
 your honors were transgressing

that I should transgress
 that thou shouldst transgress
 that he should transgress
 that your honor should transgress
 that we should transgress
 that ye should transgress
 that they should transgress
 that your honors should transgress

Past Definite

I transgressed
 thou didst transgress
 he transgressed
 your honor transgressed
 we transgressed
 ye transgressed
 they transgressed
 your honors transgressed

or should transgress, etc.

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I transgressed
 that thou transgressed
 that he transgressed
 that your honor transgressed
 that we transgressed
 that ye transgressed
 that they transgressed
 that your honors transgressed

Future

I shall transgress
 thou wilt transgress
 he will transgress
 your honor will transgress
 we shall transgress
 ye will transgress
 they will transgress
 your honors will transgress

Future

I transgress
 thou transgress
 he transgress
 your honor transgress
 we transgress
 ye transgress
 they transgress
 your honors transgress

delinca
delincas
delinca
 V. **delinca**
delincamos
delincáis
delincan
 VV. **delincan**

delinquiera
delinquieras
delinquiera
 V. **delinquiera**
delinquieramos
delinquierais
delinquieran
 VV. **delinquieran**

delinquiese
delinquieses
delinquiese
 V. **delinquiese**
delinquiesemos
delinquieséis
delinquiesen
 VV. **delinquiesen**

delinquiere
delinquieres
delinquiere
 V. **delinquiere**
delinquieremos
delinquieréis
delinquieren
 VV. **delinquieren**

or used to transgress.

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

delinco
delincas
delinque
 V. **delinques**
delinquimos
delinquen
 VV. **delinquen**

delinquí
delinquisté
delinqué
 V. **delinquisté**
delinquimos
delinquistéis
delinquieron
 VV. **delinquieron**

delinquiré
delinquirás
delinquirá
 V. **delinquirá**
delinquiramos
delinquiréis
delinquirán
 VV. **delinquirán**

Conditional (Consequent)

delinquiria I should transgress
delinquirias thou wouldst transgress
delinquiria he would transgress
delinquirias your honor would transgress
delinquiriamos we should transgress
delinquiriais ye would transgress
delinquirian they would transgress
delinquirian your honors would transgress

Conditional (Antecedent)

delinquiriera or **delinquiriese** I should transgress
delinquirieras or **delinquirieses** thou shouldst transgress
delinquiriera or **delinquiriese** he should transgress
delinquirieras or **delinquirieses** if your honor should transgress
delinquirieramos or **delinquiriescamos** we should transgress
delinquirierais or **delinquiriescáis** ye should transgress
delinquirieran or **delinquiriesen** they should transgress
delinquirieran or **delinquiriesen** your honors should transgress

or transgressed.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

delinque transgress (thou)
delinquit transgress (ye)

delinca let me transgress
delinca let him transgress
delinca transgress, your honor
delinca V. let us transgress
delinca let them transgress
delinca transgress, your honors
delinca VV.

no delinca transgress (thou) not
no delinca transgress (ye) not

no delinca let me not transgress
no delinca let him not transgress
no delinca V. transgress not, your honor.
no delinca let us not transgress
no delinca let them not transgress
no delinca transgress not, your honors

NOTE.—This verb ending in **quir** changes **qu** into **c** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber delinquido**, to have transgressed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he delinquido**, etc. I have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia delinquido**, etc. I had transgressed, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubie delinquido**, etc. (when) I had transgressed, etc.
Comp. Fut **habré delinquido**, etc. I shall have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria delinquido**, etc. I should have transgressed, etc.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiendo delinquido**, having transgressed.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya delinquido**, etc. that I have or may have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera delinquido**, etc. that I should have or had transgressed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese delinquido**, etc. that I had or should have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere delinquido**, etc. that I have or shall have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese delinquido**, etc. that I should have or had transgressed, etc.

108. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DISTINGUIR** = TO DISTINGUISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **distinguir**, to distinguish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **distinguiendo**, distinguishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **distinguido**, distinguished

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

distingo I distinguish (do distinguish, am distinguishing)
distingues thou distinguishest
distingue he distinguishes
distingue your honor distinguishes
distingamos we distinguish
distingais ye distinguish
distinguen they distinguish
distinguen your honors distinguish

Imperfect

distinguia I was distinguishing
distinguias thou wast distinguishing
distinguia he was distinguishing
distinguia your honor was distinguishing
distinguiamos we were distinguishing
distinguais ye were distinguishing
distinguan they were distinguishing
distinguan your honors were distinguishing

Past Definite

distingui I distinguished
distinguíste thou didst distinguish
distinguió he distinguished
distinguió your honor distinguished
distinguímos we distinguished
distinguísteis ye distinguished
distinguíeron they distinguished
distinguíeron your honors distinguished

Future

distinguiré I shall distinguish
distinguirás thou wilt distinguish
distinguirá he will distinguish
distinguirá your honor will distinguish
distinguiremos we shall distinguish
distinguiréis ye will distinguish
distinguirán they will distinguish
distinguirán your honors will distinguish

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I distinguish
 that thou distinguish
 that he distinguish
 that your honor distinguish
 that we distinguish
 that ye distinguish
 that they distinguish
 that your honors distinguish

distingiera
distingieras
distingiera
distingiera
distingieramos
distingierais
distingieran
distingieran

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should distinguish
 that thou shouldst distinguish
 that he should distinguish
 that your honor should distinguish
 that we should distinguish
 that ye should distinguish
 that they should distinguish
 that your honors should distinguish

distinguiera
distinguieras
distinguiera
distinguiera
distinguieramos
distinguierais
distinguieran
distinguieran

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I distinguished
 that thou distinguished
 that he distinguished
 that your honor distinguished
 that we distinguished
 that ye distinguished
 that they distinguished
 that your honors distinguished

distinguiése
distinguiéses
distinguiése
distinguiése
distinguiésemos
distinguiéscis
distinguiésen
distinguiésen

Future

I distinguish
 thou distinguish
 he distinguish
 your honor distinguish
 we distinguish
 ye distinguish
 they distinguish
 your honors distinguish

distinguiere
distinguieres
distinguiere
distinguiere
distinguiéremos
distinguiéreis
distinguiéren
distinguiéren

or may distinguish, etc.

or distinguished.

or should distinguish, etc.

or shall distinguish, etc.

if, although, while,

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

or used to distinguish.

Conditional (Consequent)

distinguiria I should distinguish
distinguirias thou wouldst distinguish
distinguiria he would distinguish
distinguirias your honor would distinguish
distinguiriamos we should distinguish
distinguiriais they would distinguish
distinguirian your honors would distinguish
VV. distinguirian

distinguiere I should distinguish
distinguieres thou shouldst distinguish
distinguiere he should distinguish
distinguiere your honor should distinguish
distinguiésemos we should distinguish
distinguiésséis they should distinguish
distinguiéssén your honors should distinguish

Conditional (Antecedent)

distinguiera or
distinguieras or
distinguiere or
distinguiere if
V. distinguiéramos or
distinguiérais or
distinguiéssén or
VV. distinguiéssén

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

distingue distinguish (thou)
distingue distinguish (ye)
distingua let me distinguish
distingua let him distinguish
distingua distinguish, your honor
distingamos let us distinguish
distingan let them distinguish
distingan distinguish, your honors
VV. distingan

no distingás distinguish (thou) not
no distingáis distinguish (ye) not
no distingas let me not distinguish
no distingas let him not distinguish
no distingas distinguish not, your honor
no distingamos let us not distinguish
no distingán let them not distinguish
no distingán distinguish not, your honors
VV. distingán

NOTE.— Verbs ending in **guir** drop **u** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present, indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. Where these changes occur the syllable is printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber distinguido**, to have distinguished. COMPOUND PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiendo distinguido**, having distinguished.
 INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he distinguido**, etc. I have distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia distinguido**, etc. I had distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubé distinguido**, etc. (when) I had distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré distinguido**, etc. I shall have distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria distinguido**, etc. I should have distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Pres. **haya distinguido**, etc. that I have or may have distinguished etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera distinguido**, etc. that I should have or had distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese distinguido**, etc. that I had or should have distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiere distinguido**, etc. that I have or shall have distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere distinguido**, etc. that I should have or had distinguished, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera** or **hubiese distinguido**, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

- * **perseguir**, to pursue a fugitive.
 - * **proseguir**, to prosecute.
 - * **seguir**, to follow.
 - * **subdistinguir**, to distinguish again (what has already been distinguished).
 - * **yoguir**, to make a stay.
- * **seguir** and its compounds also belong to the third class of irregular verbs (see § 158).

109. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB MULLIR = TO BEAT UP

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **mullir**, to beat up.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **muliendo**, beating up.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **mullido**, beaten up.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I beat (do beat, am beating) up
 thou beatest up
 he beats up
 your honor beats up
 we beat up
 ye beat up
 they beat up
 your honors beat up

mullo
mullies
mullie
 V. **mullie**
mullimos
mullis
mullien
 VV. **mullien**

Imperfect

I was beating up
 thou wast beating up
 he was beating up
 your honor was beating up
 we were beating up
 ye were beating up
 they were beating up
 your honors were beating up

mullia
mullias
mullia
 V. **mullia**
mulliamos
mulliais
mullian
 VV. **mullian**

Past Definite

I beat up
 thou didst beat up
 he beat up
 your honor beat up
 we beat up
 they beat up
 your honors beat up

mulli
mulliate
mullis
 V. **mullis**
mullimos
mullisels
mullieron
 VV. **mullieron**

Future

I shall beat up
 thou wilt beat up
 he will beat up
 your honor will beat up
 we shall beat up
 ye will beat up
 they will beat up
 your honors will beat up

mulliré
mullirás
mullirá
 V. **mullirá**
mulliremos
mulliréis
mullirán
 VV. **mullirán**

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I beat up
 that thou beat up
 that he beat up
 that your honor beat up
 that we beat up
 that ye beat up
 that they beat up
 that your honors beat up

mulla
mullias
mulla
 V. **mulla**
mulliamos
mulliais
mullan
 VV. **mullan**

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should beat up
 that thou shouldst beat up
 that he should beat up
 that your honor should beat up
 that we should beat up
 that ye should beat up
 that they should beat up
 that your honors should beat up

mulliera
mullieras
mulliera
 V. **mulliera**
mullieramos
mullierais
mullieran
 VV. **mullieran**

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I beat up
 that thou beat up
 that he beat up
 that your honor beat up
 that we beat up
 that ye beat up
 that they beat up
 that your honors beat up

mullise
mullises
mullise
 V. **mullise**
mullisemos
mullisels
mullisen
 VV. **mullisen**

Future

{ I beat up
 thou beat up
 he beat up
 your honor beat up
 we beat up
 ye beat up
 they beat up
 your honors beat up

mullere
mulleres
mullere
 V. **mullere**
mulleremos
mulleréis
mullerén
 VV. **mullerén**

si, cuando, men-
 tras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while,
 although, etc.

MULLIR

or may beat up, etc.

or beat up, etc.

or should beat up, etc.

or shall beat up, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

mullirra I should beat up
mullirras thou wouldst beat up
mulliria he would beat up
mullirria your honor would beat up
mulliriamos we should beat up
mullirialis ye would beat up
mullirian they would beat up
mullirian your honors would beat up
 VV. **mullirian**

Conditional (Antecedent)

{ V. si { VV.	mullira mulliras mullira mulliram mullirais mulliran mulliran	or mullise or mullises or mullise or mullisemos or mullisesen or mullisen	I should beat up thou shouldst beat up he should beat up your honor should beat up we should beat up he should beat up they should beat up your honors should beat up
	} or beat up.		

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

mulle mullid mulla mulla mulla V. mulliamos mullan mullan VV.	beat (thou) up beat (ye) up let me beat up let him beat up beat up, your honor let us beat up let them beat up beat up, your honors	no mullas no mullais no mulla no mulla V. no mulliamos no mullan no mullan VV.	beat (thou) not up beat (ye) not up let me not beat up let him not beat up beat not up, your honor let us not beat up let them not beat up beat not up, your honors
--	--	---	--

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **llir** drop **i** of the termination when followed by **ó** or **e**, viz., in the present participle, in the past definite third person singular and plural, and in the subjunctive tenses derived from the third person plural of the past definite. Where these changes occur the syllable is printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber mullido**, to have beaten up.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo mullido**, having beaten up.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he mullido**, etc. I have beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia mullido**, etc. I had beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo mullido**, etc. (when) I had beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré mullido**, etc. I shall have beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria mullido**, etc. I should have beaten up, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya mullido**, etc. that I have or may have beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera mullido**, etc. that I should have or had beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiese mullido**, etc. that I had or should have beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiera or hubiese mullido**, etc. that I have or shall have beaten up, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese mullido**, etc. that I should have or had beaten up, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

bullir, to boil.
desmullir, to discompose anything soft.

engullir, to gorge.
remullir, to beat up again.

salpullir, to break out in pimples.
sarpullir, to be flea-bitten.

tullir, to emit dung (birds).
zabullir, to immerge.

110. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **BRUÑIR** = TO BURNISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **bruñir**, to burnish.PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **bruñedo**, burnishing.PAST PARTICIPLE: **bruñido**, burnished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I burnish (do burnish, am burnishing)

thou burnishest

he burnishes

your honor burnishes

we burnish

ye burnish

they burnish

your honors burnish

Present

that I burnish

that thou burnish

that he burnish

that your honor burnish

that ye burnish

that they burnish

that your honors burnish

or

may

burnish,

etc.

Imperfect

I was burnishing

thou wast burnishing

he was burnishing

your honor was burnishing

we were burnishing

ye were burnishing

they were burnishing

your honors were burnishing

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should burnish

that thou shouldst burnish

that he should burnish

that your honor should burnish

that ye should burnish

that they should burnish

that your honors should burnish

or

burnished.

Past Definite

I burnished

thou didst burnish

he burnished

your honor burnished

we burnished

ye burnished

they burnished

your honors burnished

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I burnished

that thou burnished

that he burnished

that your honor burnished

that ye burnished

that they burnished

that your honors burnished

or

should

burn-

ish,

etc.

Future

I shall burnish

thou wilt burnish

he will burnish

your honor will burnish

we shall burnish

ye will burnish

they will burnish

your honors will burnish

Future

I burnish

thou burnish

he burnish

your honor burnish

we burnish

ye burnish

they burnish

your honors burnish

or

shall

burnish,

etc.

bruñia**bruñias****bruña****bruñe****bruñimos****bruñis****bruñen****bruñen****bruñia****bruñias****bruña****bruñe****bruñamos****bruñis****bruñen****bruñen****bruñi****bruñiste****bruñí****bruñí****bruñimos****bruñisteis****bruñeron****bruñeron****bruñiré****bruñirás****bruñirá****bruñirá****bruñiremos****bruñireis****bruñirán****bruñirán**

si,

cuando,

men-

tras,

aunque,

etc.

if,

when,

while,

etc.

your

honors

burnish

I

burnish

thou

burnish

he

burnish

your

honor

burnish

we

burnish

ye

burnish

they

burnish

your

honors

burnish

Conditional (Consequent)

bruñiría I should burnish
bruñirías thou wouldst burnish
bruñiría he would burnish
bruñirías your honor would burnish
bruñiríamos we should burnish
bruñiríais ye would burnish
bruñirían they would burnish
vv. bruñirían your honors would burnish

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	V.	bruñiera or bruñiese I should burnish	if	bruñiera or bruñiese thou shouldst burnish	}	<i>or</i>	burnished.
		bruñieras or bruñieses he should burnish		bruñieras or bruñieses your honor should burnish			
		bruñiéramos or bruñiésemos ,		bruñiéramos or bruñiésemos ,			
		bruñierais or bruñierais		bruñierais or bruñierais			
		vv. bruñieran or vv. bruñiesen		vv. bruñieran or vv. bruñiesen			

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

bruñe burnish (thou)
bruñid burnish (ye)

bruña let me burnish
bruña let him burnish
bruña burnish, your honor
bruñamos let us burnish
bruñan let them burnish
bruñan burnish, your honors
vv.

no bruñas burnish (thou) not
no bruñáis burnish (ye) not

no bruña let me not burnish
no bruña let him not burnish
no bruña burnish not, your honor
no bruñamos let us not burnish
no bruñan let them not burnish
no bruñan burnish not, your honors
vv.

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **ñir** drop **i** of the termination when followed by **ó** or **e**, viz. in the present participle, in the past definite third person singular and plural, and in the subjunctive tenses derived from the third person plural of the past definite. Where these changes occur the syllable is printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber bruñido**, to have burnished.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo bruñido**, having burnished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he bruñido**, etc. I have burnished, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había bruñido**, etc. I had burnished, etc.
Comp. Past. **hube bruñido**, etc. (when) I had burnished, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré bruñido**, etc. I shall have burnished, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría bruñido**, etc. I should have burnished, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya bruñido**, etc. that I have *or* may have burnished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (*1st form*) **hubiera bruñido**, etc. that I should have *or* had burnished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (*2d form*) **hubiese bruñido**, etc. that I had *or* should have burnished, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiera or hubiese** **bruñido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have burnished, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese** **bruñido**, etc. that I should have *or* had burnished, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

ganñir, to yelp.
gruñir, to grunt (hogs).

guanñir, to grunt (pigs) (Prov.).
munñir, to summon.

planñir, to lament.
regañir, to yelp repeatedly.

regruñir, to snarl.
restruñir, to restrain.

retñir, to tingle, to click.

III. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB TAÑER = TO PLAY (A STRINGED INSTRUMENT)

INFINITIVE: tañer, to play.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

taño
tañes
tañe
tañe
tañemos
tañéis
tañen
tañen
VV. tañen

I play (do play, am playing)
thou playest
he plays
your honor plays
we play
ye play
they play
your honors play

Imperfect

tañía
tañías
tañía
tañía
tañíamos
tañíais
tañían
tañían
VV. tañían

I was playing
thou wast playing
he was playing
your honor was playing
we were playing
ye were playing
they were playing
your honors were playing

Past Definite

tañí
tañiste
tañó
tañó
tañimos
tañisteis
tañeron
tañeron
VV. tañeron

I played
thou didst play
he played
your honor played
we played
they played
they played
your honors played

Future

tañeré
tañerás
tañerá
tañerá
tañeremos
tañeréis
tañerán
tañerán
VV. tañerán

I shall play
thou wilt play
he will play
your honor will play
we shall play
ye will play
they will play
your honors will play

SIMPLE TENSES

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: tañendo, playing.

tañía
tañías
taña
tañamos
tañáis
tañan
VV. tañan

tañera
tañeras
tañera
tañera
tañáramos
tañárais
tañeran
tañeran
VV. tañeran

tañese
tañeses
tañese
tañásemos
tañáreis
tañesen
tañesen
VV. tañesen

tañere
tañeres
tañere
tañáremos
tañáreis
tañeren
tañeren
VV. tañeren

PAST PARTICIPLE: tañido, played.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

tañiera
tañieras
tañiera
tañiera
tañiéramos
tañiérais
tañieran
tañieran
VV. tañieran

that I play
that thou play
that he play
that your honor play
that we play
that ye play
that they play
that your honors play

Imperfect (First Form)

tañiera
tañieras
tañiera
tañiera
tañiéramos
tañiérais
tañieran
tañieran
VV. tañieran

that I should play
that thou shouldst play
that he should play
that your honor should play
that we should play
that ye should play
that they should play
that your honors should play

Imperfect (Second Form)

tañiera
tañieras
tañiera
tañiera
tañiéramos
tañiérais
tañieran
tañieran
VV. tañieran

that I played
that thou played
that he played
that your honor played
that we played
that ye played
that they played
that your honors played

Future

tañiera
tañieras
tañiera
tañiera
tañiéramos
tañiérais
tañieran
tañieran
VV. tañieran

I play
thou play
he play
your honor play
we play
ye play
they play
your honors play

or may play, etc.

or played, etc.

or should play, etc.

or shall play, etc.

or used to play

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

tañería I should play
tañerías thou wouldst play
tañerías he would play
tañería your honor would play
tañeríamos we should play
tañeríamos ye would play
tañerían they would play
tañerían your honors would play
VV. tañerían

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	{	tañera	or	tañese	}	I should play
		tañeras	or	tañeses			thou shouldst play
if	{	tañera	or	tañese	}	you should play
		tañeras	or	tañeses			he should play
or	{	V. tañeramos	or	V. tañeremos	}	your honor should play
		tañeráreis	or	tañeréis			we should play
or	{	tañeran	or	tañerán	}	ye should play
		tañerán	or	VV. tañerán			they should play
			or	VV. tañerán	} your honors should play	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

tañe	play (thou)
tañed	play (ye)
taña	let me play
taña	let him play
taña V.	play, your honor
tañamos	let us play
tañan	let them play
tañan VV.	play, your honors

no tañas	play (thou) not
no tañáis	play (ye) not
no taña	let me not play
no taña V.	let him not play
no tañamos	play not, your honor
no tañan	let us not play
no tañan VV.	let them not play
	play not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber tañido**, to have played.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo tañido**, having played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he tañido**, etc. I have played, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había tañido**, etc. I had played, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo tañido**, etc. (when) I had played, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré tañido**, etc. I shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría tañido** etc. I should have played, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya tañido**, etc. that I have or may have played, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera tañido**, etc. that I should have or had played, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese tañido**, etc. that I had or should have played, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere tañido**, etc. that I have or shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese tañido**, etc. that I should have or had played, etc.

NOTE. — **Tañer** has the same changes as verbs ending in **ñir**.

Conjugate in the same manner:

atañer, to appertain.

REMARK — The verbs **henchir** and **reenchir** do not uniformly drop the **i** of the termination when followed by **o** or **e**.

112. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB CREER = TO BELIEVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **creer**, to believe. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **creyendo**, believing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **creído**, believed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I believe (do believe, am believing)
 thou believest
 he believes
 your honor believes
 ye believe
 they believe
 your honors believe

creo
crees
cree
creemos
creéis
creen
creen

Imperfect

I was believing
 thou wast believing
 he was believing
 your honor was believing
 we were believing
 ye were believing
 they were believing
 your honors were believing

creía
creías
creía
creía
creíamos
creíais
creían
creían

Past Definite

I believed
 thou didst believe
 he believed
 your honor believed
 we believed
 ye believed
 they believed
 your honors believed.

creí
creíste
creyó
creyó
creímos
creísteis
creyeron
creyeron

Future

I shall believe
 thou wilt believe
 he will believe
 your honor will believe
 we shall believe
 ye will believe
 they will believe
 your honors will believe

creeré
creerás
creerá
creerá
creeremos
creeréis
creerán
creerán

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I believe
 that thou believe
 that he believe
 that your honor believe
 that we believe
 that ye believe
 that they believe
 that your honors believe

crea
creas
crea
crea
creamos
creáis
crean
crean

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should believe
 that thou shouldst believe
 that he should believe
 that your honor should believe
 that we should believe
 that ye should believe
 that they should believe
 that your honors should believe

creyera
creyeras
creyera
creyera
creyéramos
creyérais
creyeran
creyeran

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I believed
 that thou believed
 that he believed
 that your honor believed
 that we believed
 that ye believed
 that they believed
 that your honors believed

creyese
creyeras
creyese
creyese
creyésemos
creyéseis
creyesen
creyesen

Future

I believe
 thou believe
 he believe
 your honor believe
 we believe
 ye believe
 they believe
 your honors believe

creyere
creyeres
creyere
creyere
creyéremos
creyéreis
creyeren
creyeren

or believed.

or should be-
 lieve, etc.

or shall believe,
 etc.

*si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.*

*if, when, while,
 although, etc.*

Conditional (Consequent)

creeria I should believe
creerías thou wouldst believe
creería he would believe
creerías your honor would believe
creeríamos we should believe
creeríais ye would believe
creerían they would believe
creerían your honors would believe
V. creeria
VV. creerían

Conditional (Antecedent)

creyera or **creyese** I should believe
creyerás or **creyeras** thou shouldst believe
creyera or **creyese** he should believe
creyeramos or **creyésemos** if
creyeráis or **creyérais** we should believe
creyeran or **creyesen** they should believe
VV. creyeran or **VV. creyesen** your honors should believe

or believed.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

crec creed	believe (thou) believe (ye)	no creas no creáis	believe (thou) not believe (ye) not
crea crea crea V. creamos crean VV.	let me believe let him believe believe, your honor let us believe let them believe believe, your honors	no crea no crea no crea V. no creamos no crean VV.	let me not believe let him not believe believe not, your honor let us not believe let them not believe believe not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **eer** or **uir** (not **quir**, **guir**) change the **i** of the diphthongal endings **ie**, **ió** to **y**, since Spanish orthography does not permit unaccented **i** to stand between two vowels, viz., in present participle, past definite third person singular and plural, and in the subjunctive tenses derived from third person plural past definite. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber creído**, to have believed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he creído**, etc. I have believed, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había creído**, etc. I had believed, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo creído**, etc. (when) I had believed, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré creído**, etc. I shall have believed, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría creído**, etc. I should have believed, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo creído**, having believed.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya creído**, etc. that I have *or* may have believed, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera creído**, etc. that I should have *or* had believed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese creído**, etc. that I had *or* should have believed, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere creído**, etc. that I have *or* shall have believed, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera** or **hubiese creído**, etc. that I should have *or* had believed, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

leer, to read. **poseer**, to possess. **proveer**, to provide.

For verbs in **uir**, see **atribuir** and **arguir**, fifth class of irregular verbs.

113. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB CONTINUAR = TO CONTINUE.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **continuar**, to continue. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **continuando**, continuing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **continuado**, continued.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present
contin'go (do continue, am continuing)
 thou continuest
 he continues
 your honor continues
 we continue
 ye continue
 they continue
 your honors continue

Present
 that I continue
 that thou continue
 that he continue
 that your honor continue
 that we continue
 that ye continue
 that they continue
 that your honors continue

or may con-
 tinue, etc.

V. **contin'ga**
contin'uamos
contin'gan

VV. **contin'gen**

Imperfect
continuaba I was continuing
continuabas thou wast continuing
continuaba he was continuing
continuaba your honor was continuing
continuabamos we were continuing
continuabais ye were continuing
continuaban they were continuing
 your honors were continuing

Imperfect (First Form)
continuara that I should continue
continuaras that thou shouldst continue
continuara that he should continue
continuaramos that your honor should continue
continuarais that we should continue
continuaran that ye should continue
continuaran that they should continue
 that your honors should continue

or continued.

Past Definite

continué I continued
continúaste thou didst continue
continó he continued
continó your honor continued
continúasteis we continued
continó ye continued
continuaron they continued
 your honors continued

Imperfect (Second Form)

continúese that I continued
continúaste that thou continuedst
continúese that he continued
continúeseis that your honor continued
continúesen that we continued
continúesen that ye continued
continúesen that they continued
 that your honors continued

or should con-
 tinue, etc.

Future

continuaré I shall continue
continuarás thou wilt continue
continuará he will continue
continuará your honor will continue
continuarémos we shall continue
continuaréis ye will continue
continuarán they will continue
 your honors will continue

Future

continuaré I continue
continuarás thou continue
continuará he continue
continuarémos your honor continue
continuaréis we continue
continuarán ye continue
continuarán they continue
 your honors continue

if, when, while,
 although, etc.

or shall con-
 tinue, etc.

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

continuaría I should continue
continuarías thou wouldst continue
continuaría he would continue
continuaría your honor would continue
continuaríamos we should continue
continuaríamos ye would continue
continuarían they would continue
continuarían your honors would continue
VV. continuarían

continuará or **continuesco** I should continue
continuarás or **continuescas** thou shouldst continue
continuará or **continuesca** he should continue
continuará or **continuesca** your honor should continue
continuaríamos or **continuescamos** if we should continue
continuaríamos or **continuescamos** if ye should continue
continuarían or **continuescieran** they should continue
continuarían or **continuescieran** your honors should continue
VV. continuarían

Conditional (Antecedent)

continuará or **continuesco** I should continue
continuarás or **continuescas** thou shouldst continue
continuará or **continuesca** he should continue
continuará or **continuesca** your honor should continue
continuaríamos or **continuescamos** if we should continue
continuaríamos or **continuescamos** if ye should continue
continuarían or **continuescieran** they should continue
continuarían or **continuescieran** your honors should continue
VV. continuarían

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

continúa continue (thou)	no continúes continue (ye) not
continúa continue (ye)	no continúes continue (ye) not
continúe let me continue	no continúe let me not continue
continúe let him continue	no continúe let him not continue
continúe continue, your honor	no continúe continue not, your honor
continúenos let us continue	no continúenos let us not continue
continúen let them continue	no continúen let them not continue
continúen continue, your honors	no continúen continue not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber continuado**, to have continued.

Indicative Mood

Comp. Pres. **he continuado**, etc. I have continued, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había continuado**, etc. I had continued, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo continuado**, etc. (when) I had continued, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habrá continuado**, etc. I shall have continued, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría continuado**, etc. I should have continued, etc.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo continuado**, having continued.

Subjunctive Mood

Comp. Pres. **haya continuado**, etc. that I have or may have continued, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera continuado**, etc. that I should have or had continued, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese continuado**, etc. that I had or should have continued, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere continuado**, etc. that I have or shall have continued, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese continuado**, etc. that I should have or had continued, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

exceptuar, to except, exempt.
expiar, to expiate.
ganuar, to pick a lock.
guzar, to guide.
vaciar, to empty.
variar, to vary.

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **lar**, **uar** require a *written* accent over the weak vowel (i, u) whenever it receives the tonic accent, viz., in first, second and third persons singular, and the third person plural, of the present indicative and the present subjunctive, and the corresponding forms of the imperative. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

NOTE. — In verbs like *estudiar*, *remediar*, *limpiar*, *combiar*, etc., the weak vowel does not receive the graphic accent, because the Spaniards pronounce the word with the tonic accent on the real stem of the verb, which precedes the weak vowel, e.g., *estudio*, etc., *remedio*, etc., *limpio*, etc., *combio*, etc.

114. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB ESTAR = TO BE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **estar**, to be.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **estando**, being.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **estado**, been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

estoy I am
estás thou art
está he is
está your honor is
estamos we are
estáis ye are
están they are
están your honors are

Imperfect

estaba I was
estabas thou wast
estaba he was
estaba your honor was
estábamos we were
estabais ye were
estaban they were
estaban your honors were

Past Definite (when)

estuve I was
estuviste thou wast
estuvo he was
estuvo your honor was
estuvimos we were
estuvisteis ye were
estuvieron they were
estuvieron your honors were

Future

estaré I shall be
estarás thou wilt be
estará he will be
estará your honor will be
estaremos we shall be
estaréis ye will be
estarán they will be
estarán your honors will be

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Future

esté that I be
estés that thou be
esté that he be
esté that your honor be
estemos that we be
estéis that ye be
estén that they be
estén that your honors be

Imperfect (First Form)

estuviera that I should be
estuvieras that thou shouldst be
estuviera that he should be
estuviera that your honor should be
estuviéramos that we should be
estuvierais that ye should be
estuvieran that they should be
estuvieran that your honors should be

Imperfect (Second Form)

estuviese that I were
estuvieses that thou were
estuviese that he were
estuviese that your honor were
estuviésemos that we were
estuvieseis that ye were
estuviesen that they were
estuviesen that your honors were

Present

estuviere I be
estuvieres thou be
estuviere he be
estuviere your honor be
estuviéremos we be
estuviereis ye be
estuvieren they be
estuvieren your honors be

ESTAR

or may be, etc.

or were.

or should be, etc.

or shall be, etc.

or used to be.

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while, although, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

estaría I should be
estarías thou wouldst be
estaría he would be
estaría your honor would be
estaríamos we should be
estaríamos ye would be
estarían they would be
estarían your honors would be

Conditional (Antecedent)

estuviera or **estuviese** I should be
estuvieras or **estuvieses** thou shouldst be
estuviera or **estuviese** he should be
estuviera or **estuviese** your honor should be
estuvieramos or **estuviésemos** if we should be
estuvieramos or **estuviésemos** ye should be
estuvieran or **estuviesen** they should be
estuvieran or **estuviesen** your honors should be

or were.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

está	be (thou)	no estés	be (thou) not
estad	be (ye)	no estéis	be (ye) not
esté	let me be	no esté	let me not be
esté	let him be	no esté	let him not be
esté V.	be, your honor	no esté V.	be not, your honor
estemos	let us be	no estemos	let us not be
estén	let them be	no estén	let them not be
estén VV.	be, your honors	no estén VV.	be not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber estado**, to have been.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo estado**, having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he estado**, etc. I have been, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia estado**, etc. I had been, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo estado**, etc. (when) I had been, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habrá estado**, etc. I shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria estado**, etc. I should have been, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya estado**, etc. that I have or may have been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera estado**, etc. that I should have or had been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese estado**, etc. that I had or should have been, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere estado**, etc. that I have or shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese estado**, etc. that I should have or had been, etc.

NOTE. — **Estar** is an irregular verb of the sixth class, see § 161.

There are two verbs meaning 'to be': **ser** and **estar**. **Estar** is used:

1. When the attribute expressed by the predicate *adjective* is accidental or temporary.
2. To indicate location of persons and things, even though permanent.
3. With the present participle to form the progressive conjugation of the verb.

Its use may perhaps be more easily understood by remembering that it is derived from the Latin, *stare*, to stand.

115. CONJUGATION OF THE PROGRESSIVE VERB ESTAR COMIENDO = TO BE EATING

SIMPLE TENSES

INFIN.: **estar comiendo**, to be eating. PRESENT PART.: **estando comiendo** being eating. PAST PART.: **estado comiendo**, been eating.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

estoy comiendo I am eating,
estas comiendo thou art eating,
esta comiendo he is eating,
V. está comiendo your honor is eating
 we are eating
estáis comiendo ye are eating
están comiendo they are eating
VV. están comiendo your honors are eating

Imperfect

estaba comiendo I was eating,
estabas comiendo thou wast eating,
estaba comiendo he was eating,
V. estaba comiendo your honor was eating
 we were eating
estabamos comiendo ye were eating
estabais comiendo they were eating
estaban comiendo they were eating
VV. estaban comiendo your honors were eating

Past Definite (when)

estuve comiendo I was eating
estuviste comiendo thou wast eating
estuvo comiendo he was eating
V. estuve comiendo your honor was eating
 we were eating
estuvisteis comiendo ye were eating
estuvieron comiendo they were eating
VV. estuvieron comiendo your honors were eating

Future

estaré comiendo I shall be eating,
estarás comiendo thou wilt be eating,
V. estará comiendo he will be eating
 your honor will be eating
estaremos comiendo we shall be eating
estareis comiendo ye will be eating
estaran comiendo they will be eating
VV. estarán comiendo your honors will be eating

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

esté comiendo that I be eating,
estés comiendo that thou be eating,
V. esté comiendo that your honor be eating
 estemos comiendo that we be eating
estéis comiendo that ye be eating
VV. estén comiendo that your honors be eating

Imperfect (First Form)

estuviera comiendo that I should be eating
estuvieras comiendo that thou shouldst be eating
V. estuviera comiendo that your honor should be eating
 estuvieramos comiendo that we should be eating
estuvierais comiendo that ye should be eating
VV. estuvieran comiendo that your honors should be eating

Imperfect (Second Form)

estuviese comiendo that I were eating
estuvieses comiendo that thou wert eating
V. estuviese comiendo that your honor were eating
 estuviesemos comiendo that ye were eating
VV. estuviesen comiendo that your honors were eating

Future

estuviere comiendo I be eating,
estuvieres comiendo thou be eating,
V. estuviere comiendo your honor be eating
 estuviéremos comiendo we be eating
estuvieréis comiendo ye be eating
VV. estuvieren comiendo they be eating
 your honors be eating

or may be eating, etc.

or were eating.

or should be eating, etc.

or shall be eating, etc.

if when, while, although, etc.

si, cuando, mientras, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

estaría comiendo I should be eating
estarias comiendo thou wouldst be eating
estaría comiendo he would be eating
estaría comiendo your honor would be eating
estariamos comiendo we should be eating
estariáis comiendo ye would be eating
estarian comiendo they should be eating
VV. estarían comiendo your honors would be eating

Conditional (Antecedent)

<p>estuviera or estuvieras or estuviera or estuvieramos or estuvierais or VV. estuvieran</p>	<p>or or or or or or</p>	<p>estuviese estuvieses estuviese estuviésemos estuvieseis estuviesen</p>	<p>if</p>	<p>comiendo</p>	<p>I should be eating thou shouldst be eating he should be eating your honor should be eating we should be eating ye should be eating they should be eating your honors should be eating</p>
---	---	--	-----------	------------------------	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p>está comiendo estad comiendo</p>	<p>be (thou) eating be (ye) eating</p>	<p>no estéis comiendo no esté comiendo no estéis comiendo no esté comiendo no estemos comiendo no estén comiendo no estén comiendo</p>	<p>be (thou) not eating be (ye) not eating let me not be eating let him not be eating be eating, your honor let us not be eating let them not be eating be eating, your honors</p>
--	---	---	---

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INF. : haber estado comiendo, to have been eating.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. he estado comiendo, etc. I have been eating, etc.
Comp. Imp. había estado comiendo, etc. I had been eating, etc.
Comp. Past Def. hube estado comiendo, etc. (when) I had been eating, etc.
Comp. Fut. habré estado comiendo, etc. I shall have been eating, etc.
Comp. Cond. habría estado comiendo, etc. I should have been eating, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. haya estado comiendo, etc. that I have or may have been eating, etc.
Comp. Imp. hubiera estado comiendo, etc. that I should have or had been eating, etc.
Comp. Imp. hubiese estado comiendo, etc. that I had or should have been eating, etc.
Comp. Fut. hubiere estado comiendo, etc. that I have or shall have been eating, etc.
Comp. Cond. hubiera or hubiese estado comiendo, etc. that I should have or had been eating, etc.

NOTE. — The present participle of a verb used with *estar*, to be, corresponds to and is an exact literal translation of the progressive form in English, and expresses the action of the verb as continuing and unfinished.

To express continuance, *estar* is not used, however, with the present participle of the verbs *ser*, to be; *ir*, to go; *venir*, to come; or *estar*, to be. We should say *él viene*, not *él está viniendo*, etc. When used to express temporary or transitory state or condition and when used to form the progressive conjugation, *estar* has quite a number of substitutes or equivalents whose meaning sufficiently explains their use. e.g. *ir*, *andar*, to go; *andar muy distraído*, he is very absent-minded; *seguir*, to go on; he went on talking, *siguió hablando*; *hallarse* or *encontrarse*, to find one's self; *me hallé hablando*, I found myself (I was) talking; *quedár, verse*: *se vió muriendo*, he saw himself (he was) dying; *se halla malo*, he is sick; *se queda callado*, he is silent.

PRONOMINAL VERBS

116. Pronominal verbs are those which have an objective pronoun that represents the same person or thing as the subject of the verb; this objective pronoun may be direct object (accusative) or indirect object (dative).

Pronominal verbs are subdivided into two classes: reflexive verbs and reciprocal verbs.

117. Reflexive verbs are those in which the action takes place upon the subject, either as direct or as indirect object; hence any transitive verb may assume the reflexive form. If the person is naturally the direct object, the object pronoun is in the accusative case; if the person is naturally the indirect object, the object pronoun is in the dative case. But both these reflexive object pronoun forms are identical in the dative and the accusative, as will be seen from the following:

Nominative	Accusative and Dative	
<i>yo</i>	<i>me</i>	I myself (<i>or</i> to myself)
<i>tú</i>	<i>te</i>	Thou thyself (<i>or</i> to thyself).
<i>él, ella, V.</i>	<i>se</i>	He, her, your honor himself <i>or</i> herself (<i>or</i> to himself <i>or</i> herself).
<i>nosotros -as</i>	<i>nos</i>	We ourselves (<i>or</i> to ourselves).
<i>vosotros -as</i>	<i>os</i>	Ye yourselves (<i>or</i> to yourselves).
<i>ellos, ellas, VI.</i>	<i>se</i>	They, your honors themselves (<i>or</i> to themselves).

118. Reciprocal verbs are those in which the action takes place between two or among a number of persons; hence the verb is always in the plural, and the object pronouns (identical in form with the plural reflexive objective pronouns, *nos, os, se*) are to be translated *each other* if the action be of one person on another, and *one another* if more than two are concerned.

Position of the Object Pronouns

119. The position of the object pronouns is the same as that of ordinary object pronouns.

120. In the infinitive, present participle, and imperative affirmative, the object pronouns stand after the verb, and are joined to it so as to form one word, the graphic accent being used when necessary to maintain the original pronunciation of the verb. Example: *Comerlo, comiéndolo, cómalo V. ; lavarse lavándose, lávese V.*

When the object pronouns are thus placed after the verb, *d* in the second person plural of the imperative affirmative is elided for euphony (except in the verb *ir*, which makes *idos*, go away), as is also the *s* in the first person plural imperative affirmative; thus *lavados* becomes *lavaos*, wash yourselves, and *lavámosnos* becomes *lavámonos*, let us wash ourselves.

To Distinguish between Reflexive and Reciprocal Use

121. In the three persons plural, to show that a verb is used reflexively and not reciprocally; and in the three persons singular, to indicate emphasis or contrast, the pleonastic prepositional form of the object pronoun preceded by *á* is added to the verb, and may be strengthened by using *mismo* or *propio*, equivalent to the English *own*, or *very*; so that the full distinctive reflexive or emphatic construction would be (observe the order with reference to the verb in sentence):

Nominative	Accusative and Dative	Verb	Prepositional form with <i>á</i> strengthened by <i>mismo -a, propio -a</i>
<i>yo</i>	<i>me</i>	“	<i>á mí mismo -a (propio -a)</i> , my own self <i>or</i> to my own self.
<i>tú</i>	<i>te</i>	“	<i>á tí mismo -a (propio -a)</i> , thy own self <i>or</i> to thy own self.
<i>él, ella, V.</i>	<i>se</i>	“	<i>á sí mismo -a (propio -a)</i> .
<i>nosotros -as</i>	<i>nos</i>	“	<i>á nosotros mismos -as (propios -as)</i> .
<i>vosotros -as</i>	<i>os</i>	“	<i>á vosotros mismos -as (propios -as)</i> .
<i>ellos, ellas, VV.</i>	<i>se</i>	“	<i>á sí mismos -as (propios -as)</i> .

Yo me lavo á mi mismo, I wash my own self.

Ellas se lavan á sí mismas, they wash their very selves.

This pleonastic construction, be it understood, may also be used without *mismo -a*, *propio -a*. In this case the equivalent English emphasis would be,

Yo me lavo á mí, I wash myself.

122. In the three persons plural, to show that the verb is used reciprocally and not reflexively, the appropriate forms, *uno . . . otro*, *una . . . otra*, *unos . . . otros*, *unas . . . otras*, or *el uno . . . el otro*, *la una . . . la otra*, *los unos . . . los otros*, *las unas . . . las otras*, meaning each other, one another, must be employed.

Ellas se lavan á sí mismas, they wash themselves ; but

Ellas se lavan las unas á las otras, they wash one another.

123. Besides the class of verbs temporarily used as reflexive verbs, there is a large class of permanent or essential reflexive verbs — verbs that have the reflexive form only.

To make the student familiar with this important subject, we shall give :

1. The conjugation of a temporary reflexive verb, with the pronoun object in the accusative case (*lavarse*).

2. The conjugation of a temporary reflexive verb, with the pronoun object in the dative case (*permitirse*).

3. The conjugation of a permanent reflexive verb (*alegrarse*).

4. The conjugation of the impersonal substitute for the personal forms of a permanent reflexive verb (*alegrarse*).

5. The conjugation of a reciprocal verb (*abrazarse*).

124. Before proceeding with these conjugations, attention is invited to the following table of personal pronouns and their inflections; to the favorite pleonastic construction; and to the important rules for the position of two objective pronouns — all of great importance in the proper use of reflexive verbs.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS AND THEIR INFLECTIONS

Pleonastic construction: 1st, dative and prepositional (with *á*): *le habla á él*, he speaks to him; 2d, accusative and prepositional (with *á*): *la busca á ella*, he seeks her.

		Nominative	Dative	Accusative	Prepositional	
Singular	1st Person	yo	me	me	mí, (conmigo)	
	2d Person	tú	te	te	tí (contigo)	
	3d Person	Masculine	él	le	le (<i>him</i>), lo (<i>it</i>)	él
		Feminine	ella	le	la (<i>her, it</i>)	ella
	Neuter	ello	[none]	lo (<i>it</i>)	ello	
Plural	1st Person	Masculine	nosotros	nos	nos	nosotros
		Feminine	nosotras	nos	nos	nosotras
	2d Person	Masculine	vosotros	os	os	vosotros
		Feminine	vosotras	os	os	vosotras
	3d Person	Masculine	ellos	les	los	ellos
		Feminine	ellas	les	las	ellas
	<i>Se</i> , reflexive substitute for 3d person common to both numbers. Corresponds to English <i>self</i> in 3d person, to distinguish reflexive action. He strikes him = another, but he strikes himself.	[none]	se	se	sí (consigo)	
	<i>Usted</i> should be treated like a noun, invariable except for number, plural <i>ustedes</i> , hence:	{ V.	á V.	á V.	á con, etc., V.	
	Pleonastic construction for V.	{ VV.	á VV.	á VV.	á, con, etc., VV.	
			{ le . . á V.	le, la . . á V.		
			{ les . . á VV.	los, las . . á VV.		

NOTE. — Concerning the use of *le, lo, la, les, los, las*, the following is the prevailing usage, as indicated in the foregoing table, although it is well to remember there are others: *le* (dative) = to him, to her; *les* (dative) = to them (masculine and feminine). In the accusative, *le* = him (only), e. g., *le veo*, I see him (only); *la* = her (or 'it', feminine), e. g., I see her, *la veo*; I see it (pen), *la veo*; *lo* = it (masculine or neuter), e. g., I see it (book), *lo veo*; I believe it, *lo creo*; *los* = them (persons or things, feminine), e. g., I see them (women or pens), *los veo*.

RULES FOR THE POSITION OF TWO OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS

125. A verb may have two pronouns as objects, one direct (accusative), the other indirect (dative). When the direct object is a pronoun of the third person, they appear together before the verb (except in the infinitive, present participle, and imperative affirmative, when they are added to and form one with the verb, which must have a written accent when necessary to preserve original tonic accent). The dative precedes the accusative; except that *se* always stands first, whatever be its case: *él me lo da*; *dámelo*; *se me escapó*; *désclo V*.

126. When the direct object is a pronoun of the first or second person, or is a reflexive pronoun, the accusative stands before the verb and the dative follows the verb and assumes the prepositional form (except in the infinitive, present participle and imperative affirmative, when they are added to the verb, the accusative preceding the dative: *réndeteme tú*; *rendiéndoteme*; *rendérteme*): *te enviarán á mí*; *me enviarán a tí*; *me han dirigido á él*; *se dirige á mí*.

127. If both pronouns are of the third person, the dative *le, les*, is written *se* for euphony; this *se* must not be confused with the reflexive *se*: *le lo = se lo*; *le la = se la*; *le los = se los*; *le las = se las*; *les lo = se lo*, etc. *No se lo permiten*, they do not permit him (it to him).

128. CONJUGATION OF THE (ACCUSATIVE) REFLEXIVE VERB **LAVARSE** = TO WASH ONE'S SELF

INFINITIVE: **lavarse**, to wash one's self. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **lavándose**, washing one's self. PAST PARTICIPLE: **lavado**, washed.

SIMPLE TENSES

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo me lavo I wash myself (do wash myself, am washing myself)
tú te lavas thou wastest thyself
él se lava he washes himself
V. se lava your honor washes himself
nosotros nos lavamos we wash ourselves
vosotros os laváis ye wash yourselves
ellos se lavan they wash themselves
VV. se lavan your honors wash themselves

Imperfect

yo me lavaba I was washing myself
tú te lavabas thou wast washing thyself
él se lavaba he was washing himself
V. se lavaba your honor was washing himself
nosotros nos lavábamos we were washing ourselves
vosotros os lavabais ye were washing yourselves
ellos se lavaban they were washing themselves
VV. se lavaban your honors were washing themselves

Past Definite

yo me lavé I washed myself
tú te lavaste thou didst wash thyself
él se lavó he washed himself
V. se lavó your honor washed himself
nosotros nos lavamos we washed ourselves
vosotros os lavasteis ye washed yourselves
ellos se lavaron they washed themselves
VV. se lavaron your honors washed themselves

Future

yo me lavaré I shall wash myself
tú te lavarás thou wilt wash thyself
él se lavará he will wash himself
V. se lavará your honor will wash himself
nosotros nos lavaremos we shall wash ourselves
vosotros os lavaréis ye will wash yourselves
ellos se lavarán they will wash themselves
VV. se lavarán your honors will wash themselves

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo me lave that I wash myself
tú te laves that thou wash thyself
él se lave that he wash himself
V. se lave that your honor wash himself
nosotros nos lavemos that we wash ourselves
vosotros os lavéis that ye wash yourselves
ellos se laven that they wash themselves
VV. se laven that your honors wash themselves

Imperfect (First Form)

yo me lavara that I should wash myself
tú te lavaras that thou shouldst wash thyself
él se lavara that he should wash himself
V. se lavara that your honor should wash himself
nosotros nos laváramos that we should wash ourselves
vosotros os lavarais that ye should wash yourselves
ellos se lavarán that they should wash themselves
VV. se lavarán that your honors should wash themselves

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo me lavase that I washed myself
tú te lavases that thou shouldst wash thyself
él se lavase that he should wash himself
V. se lavase that your honor should wash himself
nosotros nos lavásemos that we washed ourselves
vosotros os lavaseis that ye washed yourselves
ellos se lavasen that they washed themselves
VV. se lavasen that your honors washed themselves

Future

yo me lavare I shall wash myself
tú te lavares thou shalt wash thyself
él se lavare he shall wash himself
V. se lavare your honor shall wash himself
nosotros nos laváremos we shall wash ourselves
vosotros os lavaréis ye shall wash yourselves
ellos se lavaren they shall wash themselves
VV. se lavaren your honors shall wash themselves

Conditional (Consequent)

yo me lavaría
tú te lavarías
él se lavaría
V. se lavaría
nosotros nos lavaríamos
vosotros os lavaríais
ellos se lavarían
VV. se lavarían

I should wash myself
 thou wouldst wash thyself
 he would wash himself
 your honor would wash himself
 we should wash ourselves
 they would wash themselves
 your honors would wash themselves

yo me lavara
tú te lavarás
él se lavara
V. se lavara
nos. nos lavaríamos
vos. os lavaríais
ellos se lavarán
VV. se lavarán

si

Conditional (Antecedent)

yo me lavase
tú te lavases
él se lavase
V. se lavase
nos. nos lavásemos
vos. os lavaseis
ellos se lavasen
VV. se lavasen

if

I should wash myself
 thou shouldst wash thyself
 he should wash himself
 your honor should wash himself
 we should wash ourselves
 ye should wash yourselves
 they should wash themselves
 your honors should wash themselves

or washed my-
 self, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

lávate tú
lavaos vosotros

wash (thou) thyself
 wash (ye) yourselves

lávame yo
lávase él
lávase V.
lavemonos nosotros
lávense ellos
lávense VV.

let me wash myself
 let him wash himself
 wash yourself, your honor
 let us wash ourselves
 let them wash themselves
 wash yourselves, your honors

no te laves tú
no os lavéis vosotros

wash (thou) not thyself
 wash (ye) not yourselves

no me lave yo
no se lave él
no se lave V.
no nos lavemos nosotros
no se laven ellos
no se laven VV.

let me not wash myself
 let him not wash himself
 wash not yourself, your honor
 let us not wash ourselves
 let them not wash themselves
 wash not yourselves, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haberse lavado**, to have washed one's self.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose lavado**, having washed one's self.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **yo me he lavado**, etc. I have washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **yo me habia lavado**, etc. I had washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **yo me hube lavado**, etc. (when) I had washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **yo me habré lavado**, etc. I shall have washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **yo me habría lavado**, etc. I should have washed myself, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **yo me haya lavado**, etc. that I have or may have washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **yo me hubiera lavado**, etc. that I should have or had washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **yo me hubiese lavado**, etc. that I had or should have washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **yo me hubiere lavado**, etc. that I have or shall have washed myself, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **yo me hubiera or hubiese lavado**, etc. that I should have or had washed myself, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner :

alabarse, to praise one's self. **consolarse**, to console one's self. **cubrirse**, to cover one's self. **engañarse**, to deceive one's self. **mirarse**, to see one's self.
amarse, to love one's self. **cortarse**, to cut one's self. **culpase**, to blame one's self. **meterse**, to put one's self. **quemarse**, to burn one's self.

NEGATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATIONS

(These are the same as those of any verb having objective pronouns.)

129. The negative conjugation of a reflexive or a reciprocal verb is formed by inserting the adverb *no*, not, before the object pronouns in both the simple and the compound tenses. In the imperative negative the object pronouns stand before the verb.

130. The interrogative and the negative-interrogative conjugations occur only in the tenses of the indicative mood.

131. The interrogative conjugation is formed by placing the subject after the verb in simple tenses, and after the past participle in compound tenses; an inverted question-mark is placed at the beginning and a direct question-mark at the end of the expression.

132. The negative-interrogative conjugation is the same as the interrogative, except that *no* precedes the object pronoun in both simple and compound tenses. The following will illustrate fully:

SIMPLE TENSES

NEGATIVE CONJUGATION	INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION
<i>Present Indicative</i>	<i>Present Indicative</i>
(yo) no me lavo	¿ me lavo (yo) ?
(tú) no te lavas	¿ te lavas (tú) ?
(él) no se lava	¿ se lava (él) ?
V. no se lava	¿ se lava V. ?
(nosotros) no nos lavamos	¿ nos lavamos (nosotros) ?
(vosotros) no os laváis	¿ os laváis (vosotros) ?
(ellos) no se lavan	¿ se lavan (ellos) ?
VV. no se lavan	¿ se lavan VV. ?
I do not wash myself, etc.	Do I wash myself? etc.

NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

<i>Present Indicative</i>
¿ no me lavo (yo) ?
¿ no te lavas (tú) ?
¿ no se lava (él) ?
¿ no se lava V. ?
¿ no nos lavamos (nosotros) ?

¿ no os laváis (*vosotros*) ?

¿ no se lavan (*ellos*) ?

¿ no se lavan *VV.* ?

Do I not wash myself? etc.

COMPOUND TENSES

NEGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

(<i>yo</i>)	no me he lavado	I have not washed myself
(<i>tú</i>)	no te has lavado	Thou hast not washed thyself
(<i>él</i>)	no se ha lavado	He has not washed himself
<i>V.</i>	no se ha lavado	Your honor has not washed himself
(<i>nosotros</i>)	no nos hemos lavado	We have not washed ourselves
(<i>vosotros</i>)	no os habéis lavado	Ye have not washed yourselves
(<i>ellos</i>)	no se han lavado	They have not washed themselves
<i>VV.</i>	no se han lavado	Your honors have not washed themselves

INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

¿	me he lavado (<i>yo</i>) ?	Have I washed myself?
¿	te has lavado (<i>tú</i>) ?	Hast thou washed thyself?
¿	se ha lavado (<i>él</i>) ?	Has he washed himself?
¿	se ha lavado <i>V.</i> ?	Has your honor washed himself?
¿	nos hemos lavado (<i>nosotros</i>) ?	Have we washed ourselves?
¿	os habéis lavado (<i>vosotros</i>)	Have ye washed yourselves?
¿	se han lavado (<i>ellos</i>) ?	Have they washed themselves?
¿	se han lavado <i>VV.</i> ?	Have your honors washed themselves?

NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

¿	no me he lavado (<i>yo</i>) ?	Have I not washed myself?
¿	no te has lavado (<i>tú</i>) ?	Hast thou not washed thyself?
¿	no se ha lavado (<i>él</i>) ?	Has he not washed himself?
¿	no se ha lavado <i>V.</i> ?	Has your honor not washed himself?
¿	no nos hemos lavado (<i>nosotros</i>) ?	Have we not washed ourselves?
¿	no os habéis lavado (<i>vosotros</i>) ?	Have ye not washed yourselves?
¿	no se han lavado (<i>ellos</i>) ?	Have they not washed themselves?
¿	no se han lavado <i>VV.</i> ?	Have your honors not washed themselves?

133. THE (DATIVE) REFLEXIVE VERB PERMITIRSE = TO ALLOW, PERMIT (TO) ONE'S SELF

INFIN.: **permitirse**, to { allow } to one's self. PRESENT PARTIC.: **permitiéndose**. { allowing } to one's self. PAST PARTIC.: **permitido**, permitted.

SIMPLE TENSES

INDICATIVE MOOD

me permito
te permites
se permite
V. se permite
nos permitimos
os permitís
se permiten
VV. se permiten

Present

I permit myself (to permit myself, am permitting myself)
thou dost permit thyself
he permits himself
your honor permits himself
we permit ourselves
ye permit yourselves
they permit themselves
your honors permit themselves

Imperfect

me permitía
te permitías
se permitía
V. se permitía
nos permitíamos
os permitíais
se permitían
VV. se permitían

I was permitting myself
thou wast permitting thyself
he was permitting himself
your honor was permitting himself
we were permitting ourselves
ye were permitting yourselves
they were permitting themselves
your honors were permitting themselves

Past Definite

me permití
te permitiste
se permitió
V. se permitió
nos permitimos
os permitisteis
se permitieron
VV. se permitieron

I permitted myself
thou didst permit thyself
he permitted himself
your honor permitted himself
we permitted ourselves
ye permitted yourselves
they permitted themselves
your honors permitted themselves

Future

me permitiré
te permitirás
se permitirá
V. se permitirá
nos permitiremos
os permitiréis
se permitirán
VV. se permitirán

I shall permit myself
thou wilt permit thyself
he will permit himself
your honor will permit himself
we shall permit ourselves
ye will permit yourselves
they will permit themselves
your honors will permit themselves

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

me permita
te permitas
se permita
V. se permita
nos permitamos
os permitáis
se permitan
VV. se permitan

Present

that I permit myself
that thou permit thyself
that he permit himself
that your honor permit himself
that we permit ourselves
that ye permit yourselves
that they permit themselves
that your honors permit themselves

Imperfect (First Form)

me permitiera
te permitieras
se permitiera
V. se permitiera
nos permitiéramos
os permitierais
se permitieran
VV. se permitieran

that I should permit myself
that thou shouldst permit thyself
that he should permit himself
that your honor should permit himself
that we should permit ourselves
that ye should permit yourselves
that they should permit themselves
that your honors should permit themselves

Imperfect (Second Form)

me permitiese
te permitieses
se permitiese
V. se permitiese
nos permitiésemos
os permitieseis
se permitiesen
VV. se permitiesen

that I permitted myself
that thou permitted thyself
that he permitted himself
that your honor permitted himself
that we permitted ourselves
that ye permitted yourselves
that they permitted themselves
that your honors permitted themselves

Future

me permitiere
te permitieres
se permitiere
V. se permitiere
nos permitiéremos
os permitiereis
se permitieren
VV. se permitieren

I permit myself
thou permit thyself
he permit himself
your honor permit himself
we permit ourselves
ye permit yourselves
they permit themselves
your honors permit themselves

If, when, while,
although, etc.

or shall permit
myself, etc.

or may permit
myself, etc.

or permitted my-
self, etc.

or should permit
myself, etc.

or shall permit
myself, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

me permitiría I should permit myself
te permitirías thou wouldst permit thyself
se permitiría he would permit himself
V. se permitiría your honor would permit himself
nos permitiríamos we should permit ourselves
os permitiríais ye would permit yourselves
se permitirían they would permit themselves
VV. se permitirían your honors would permit themselves

me permitiría
te permitirías
se permitiría
V. se permitiría
nos permitiríamos
os permitiríais
VV. se permitirían

Conditional (Antecedent)

or me permitiese I should permit myself
or te permitieses thou shouldst permit thyself
or se permitiese he should permit himself
or V. se permitiese your honor should permit himself
or nos permitiésemos we should permit ourselves
or os permitiéseis ye should permit yourselves
or se permitiesen they should permit themselves
or VV. se permitiesen your honors should permit themselves

or permitted myself, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

permitete permitios	permit (thou) thyself permit (ye) yourselves	no te permitas no os permitáis	do (thou) not permit thyself do (ye) not permit yourselves
permítame permítase V.	let me permit myself let him permit himself	no me permita no se permita V.	let me not permit myself let him not permit himself
permítámonos permítanse VV.	let us permit ourselves let them permit themselves	no nos permitamos no se permitan VV.	let us not permit ourselves let them not permit themselves
	your honors would permit themselves		do not permit yourselves, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFIN.: **haberse permitido**, to have permitted to one's self.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	me he permitido , etc.	I have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Imp.	me habia permitido , etc.	I had permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	me habe permitido , etc.	(when) I had permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Fut.	me habré permitido , etc.	I shall have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Cond.	me habria permitido , etc.	I should have permitted myself, etc.

aludirse, to allude to one's self.
arrogarse, to arrogate to one's self.
atribuirse, to attribute to one's self.
cantarse, to sing to one's self.
comprarse, to buy for one's self.
confesarse, to acknowledge to one's self.

COMP. PRES. PARTIC.: **habiéndosese permitido**, having permitted to one's self.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	me haya permitido , etc.	that I have or may have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	me hubiera permitido , etc.	that I should have or had permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	me hubiese permitido , etc.	that I had or should have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Fut.	me hubiere permitido , etc.	that I have or shall have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Cond.	me hubiera o hubiese permitido , etc.	that I should have, or had permitted myself, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

escribirse, to write to one's self.
figurarse, to imagine (to figure to one's self).
hablarse, to speak to one's self.
leerse, to read to one's self.
murmurarse, to murmur to one's self.
persuadirse, to persuade one's self.

prestarle, to lend to one's self.
preguntarse, to ask of one's self.
prometerse, to promise to one's self.
reirse, to laugh to one's self.
representarse, to represent to one's self.
someterse, to submit to one's self.

134. CONJUGATION OF THE PERMANENT REFLEXIVE VERB ALEGRARSE = TO REJOICE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **alegrarse**, to rejoice.
INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **alegrandose**, rejoicing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **alegrado**, rejoiced.
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

I rejoice (do rejoice, am rejoicing)

me alegro
te alegras
se alegra
V. se alegra
nos alegramos
os alegráis
se alegran
VV. se alegran

me alegro
te alegras
se alegra
V. se alegra
nos alegramos
os alegráis
se alegran
VV. se alegran

that I rejoice
that thou rejoicest
that he rejoices
that your honor rejoice
that ye rejoice
that they rejoice
that your honors rejoice

or may rejoice,
etc.

Imperfect

I was rejoicing
thou wast rejoicing
he was rejoicing
your honor was rejoicing
we were rejoicing
ye were rejoicing
they were rejoicing
your honors were rejoicing

or used to rejoice.

me alegraba
te alegrabas
se alegraba
V. se alegraba
nos alegrábamos
os alegrabais
se alegraban
VV. se alegraban

that I should rejoice
that thou shouldst rejoice
that he should rejoice
that your honor should rejoice
that we should rejoice
that ye should rejoice
that they should rejoice
that your honors should rejoice

or rejoiced,
etc.

Past Definite

I rejoiced
thou didst rejoice
he rejoiced
your honor rejoiced
we rejoiced
ye rejoiced
they rejoiced
your honors rejoiced

or should rejoice,
etc.

me alegré
te alegraste
se alegró
V. se alegró
nos alegramos
os alegrasteis
se alegraron
VV. se alegraron

that I rejoiced
that thou rejoiced
that he rejoiced
that your honor rejoiced
that we rejoiced
that ye rejoiced
that they rejoiced
that your honors rejoiced

or should rejoice,
etc.

Future

I shall rejoice
thou wilt rejoice
he will rejoice
your honor will rejoice
we shall rejoice
ye will rejoice
they will rejoice
your honors will rejoice

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

me alegraré
te alegrarás
se alegrará
V. se alegrará
nos alegraremos
os alegrareis
se alegrarán
VV. se alegrarán

I rejoice
thou rejoice
he rejoice
your honor rejoice
we rejoice
ye rejoice
they rejoice
your honors rejoice

or shall rejoice,
etc.

ALEGRARSE

Conditional (Consequent)

me alegraría I should rejoice
te alegrarías thou wouldst rejoice
se alegraría he would rejoice
V. se alegraría your honor would rejoice
nos alegraríamos we should rejoice
os alegraríais ye would rejoice
se alegrarían they would rejoice
VV. se alegrarían your honors would rejoice

Conditional (Antecedent)

<p>me alegrara te alegraras se alegrara V. se alegrara nos alegráramos os alegraríais se alegrarían VV. se alegrarían</p>	<p>or</p> <p>si</p>	<p>me alegrase te alegrases se alegrase V. se alegrase nos alegrásemos os alegraríais se alegrarían VV. se alegrarían</p>	<p>if</p>	<p>I should rejoice thou shouldst rejoice he should rejoice your honor should rejoice we should rejoice ye should rejoice they should rejoice your honors should rejoice</p>
--	---------------------	--	-----------	---

or rejoiced.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

alegrate rejoice (thou)
alegraos rejoice (ye)

alegrame let me rejoice
alegrese let him rejoice
alegrese V. rejoice, your honor
alegrémonos let us rejoice
alegrense let them rejoice
alegrense VV. rejoice, your honors

no te alegrés rejoice (thou) not
no os alegréis rejoice (ye) not

no me alegre let me not rejoice
no se alegre let him not rejoice
no se alegre V. rejoice not, your honor
no nos alegremos let us not rejoice
no se alegren let them not rejoice
no se alegren VV. rejoice not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE; **haberse alegrado**, to have rejoiced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **me he alegrado**, etc. I have rejoiced, etc.
me habia alegrado, etc. I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. **me hubiese alegrado**, etc. (when) I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **me habré alegrado**, etc. I shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut. **me habría alegrado**, etc. I should have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond. **me habría alegrado**, etc. I should have rejoiced, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **me haya alegrado**, etc. that I have or may have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. **me hubiera alegrado**, etc. that I should have or had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. **me hubiese alegrado**, etc. that I had or should have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut. **me hubiere alegrado**, etc. that I have or shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond. **me hubiera or hubiese alegrado**, etc. that I should have or had rejoiced, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abstenerse de, to abstain from.
achisparse, to get tipsy.
airarse, to grow angry.

arrepentirse de, to repent of
ausentarse, to absent one's self.
burlearse, to laugh at.

desatufarse, to grow calm.
dignarse, to deign to.
entoscarse, to be uneasy.

gloriarse, to glory.
lactarse, to boast.
quejarse, to complain.

135. IMPERS. CONJ. OF THE PERMANENT REFLEXIVE VERB **ALEGRARSE** = TO REJOICE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **alegrarse**, to rejoice.
 INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **alegrándose**, rejoicing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **alegrado**, rejoiced.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

se me alegrá I rejoice (do rejoice, am rejoicing)
se te alegrá thou rejoicest
se le alegrá he rejoices
se le alegrá á V. your honor rejoices
se nos alegrá we rejoice
se os alegrá ye rejoice
se les alegrá they rejoice
se les alegrá á VV. your honors rejoice

Imperfect

se me alegraba I was rejoicing
se te alegraba thou wast rejoicing
se le alegraba he was rejoicing
se le alegraba á V. your honor was rejoicing
se nos alegraba we were rejoicing
se os alegraba ye were rejoicing
se les alegraba they were rejoicing
se les alegraba á VV. your honors were rejoicing

Past Definite

se me alegró I rejoiced
se te alegró thou didst rejoice
se le alegró he rejoiced
se le alegró á V. your honor rejoiced
se nos alegró we rejoiced
se os alegró ye rejoiced
se les alegró they rejoiced
se les alegró á VV. your honors rejoiced

Future

se me alegrará I shall rejoice
se te alegrará thou wilt rejoice
se le alegrará he will rejoice
se le alegrará á V. your honor will rejoice
se nos alegrará we shall rejoice
se os alegrará ye will rejoice
se les alegrará they will rejoice
se les alegrará á VV. your honors will rejoice

se me alegre
se te alegre
se le alegre
se le alegre á V.
se nos alegre
se os alegre
se les alegre
se les alegre á VV.

Imperfect (First Form)

se me alegrara
se te alegrara
se le alegrara
se le alegrara á V.
se nos alegrara
se os alegrara
se les alegrara
se les alegrara á VV.

Imperfect (Second Form)

se me alegrase
se te alegrase
se le alegrase
se le alegrase á V.
se nos alegrase
se os alegrase
se les alegrase
se les alegrase á VV.

Future

se me alegrare
se te alegrare
se le alegrare
se le alegrare á V.
se nos alegrare
se os alegrare
se les alegrare
se les alegrare á VV.

Present

that I rejoice
 that thou rejoice
 that he rejoice
 that your honor rejoice
 that we rejoice
 that ye rejoice
 that they rejoice
 that your honors rejoice

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should rejoice
 that thou shouldst rejoice
 that he should rejoice
 that your honor should rejoice
 that we should rejoice
 that ye should rejoice
 that they should rejoice
 that your honors should rejoice

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I rejoiced
 that thou rejoiced
 that he rejoiced
 that your honor rejoiced
 that we rejoiced
 that ye rejoiced
 that they rejoiced
 that your honors rejoiced

Future

I rejoice
 thou rejoice
 he rejoice
 your honor rejoice
 we rejoice
 ye rejoice
 they rejoice
 your honors rejoice

OR may rejoice,
 etc.

OR rejoiced.

OR should re-
 joice, etc.

OR shall rejoice,
 etc.

ALEGRARSE

si, cuando, men-
 tras, aunque, etc.

your honors will rejoice

Conditional (Consequent)

se me alegraría I should rejoice
se te alegraría thou wouldst rejoice
se le alegraría he would rejoice
se le alegraría á V. your honor would rejoice
se nos alegraría we should rejoice
se os alegraría ye would rejoice
se les alegraría they would rejoice
se les alegraría á VV. your honors would rejoice

si { **se me alegrara**
se te alegrara
se le alegrara
se le alegrara á V.
se nos alegrara
se os alegrara
se les alegrara
se les alegrara á VV.

or **se me alegrase**
 or **se te alegrase**
 or **se le alegrase**
 or **se le alegrase á V.**
 or **se nos alegrase**
 or **se os alegrase**
 or **se les alegrase**
 or **se les alegrase á VV.**

Conditional (Antecedent)

I should rejoice
 thou shouldst rejoice
 he should rejoice
 your honor should rejoice
 we should rejoice
 ye should rejoice
 they should rejoice
 your honors should rejoice

or rejoiced.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE (LITERALLY) *

alégrasete let it rejoice itself to thee
alégraseos let it rejoice itself to ye

alégraseme let it rejoice itself to me
alégresele let it rejoice itself to him
alégresele á V. let it rejoice itself to your honor
alégresenos let it rejoice itself to us
alégreseles let it rejoice itself to them
alégraseselos á VV. let it rejoice itself to your honors

no se te alegre do not let it rejoice itself to thee
no se os alegre do not let it rejoice itself to ye

no se me alegre let it not rejoice itself to me
no se le alegre let it not rejoice itself to him
no se le alegre á V. let it not rejoice itself to your honor
no se nos alegre let it not rejoice itself to us
no se les alegre let it not rejoice itself to them
no se les alegre á VV. let it not rejoice itself to your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haberse alegrado**, to have rejoiced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **se me ha alegrado**, etc. I have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. **se me habia alegrado**, etc. I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **se me hubo alegrado**, etc. (when) I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut. **se me habrá alegrado**, etc. I shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond. **se me habria alegrado**, etc. I should have rejoiced, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose alegrado**, having rejoiced.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **se me haya alegrado**, etc. that I have or may have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. **se me hubiera alegrado**, etc. that I should have or had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **se me hubiese alegrado**, etc. that I had or should have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **se me hubiere alegrado**, etc. that I have or shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut. **se me hubiere alegrado**, etc. that I should have or shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond. **se me hubiera or hubiese alegrado**, etc. that I should have or had rejoiced, etc.

*The free translation will be found on p. 87.

IMPERSONAL REFLEXIVE USED FOR THE PERSONAL REFLEXIVE

136. Permanent reflexive verbs, besides being conjugated in all the persons and numbers, may also be conjugated impersonally; that is, with the reflexive pronoun *se* throughout, and the verb in the third person singular of each tense, the respective dative pronouns being used to distinguish person and number, as follows:

se me alegra, alegraba, etc.	I rejoice, was rejoicing, etc.
se te alegra, alegraba, etc.	thou rejoicest, wast rejoicing, etc.
se le alegra, alegraba, etc.	he rejoices, was rejoicing, etc.
se le alegra á V., alegraba á V., etc.	your honor rejoices, was rejoicing, etc.
se nos alegra, alegraba, etc.	we rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.
se os alegra, alegraba, etc.	ye rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.
se les alegra, alegraba, etc.	they rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.
se les alegra á VV., alegraba á VV., etc.	your honors rejoice, were re- joicing, etc.

To accustom the student to this common form of expression the verb is written out in full on pages 88, 89.

The meaning is practically the same as in the personal conjugation on pages 86, 87.

The explanation of this seems to be that the Spaniard, in saying *se me alegra*, etc., really without thinking uses *se* as a subject, although it has the objective form. Just as in English, when we say "methinks I see," me is unthinkingly used as a subject, although it has the objective form, the expression being equivalent to "I think I see."

Conjugate like abrazarse, p. 91.

admirarse , to admire each other.	educarse , to educate each other.
afeitarse , to shave each other.	engañarse , to deceive each other.
ayudarse , to aid each other.	felicitarse , to congratulate each other.
comprenderse , to understand each other.	interrumpirse , to interrupt each other.
consultarse , to consult each other.	mirarse , to look at each other.
conocerse , to know each other.	mostrarse , to show to each other.
detestarse , to detest each other.	oprimirse , to oppress each other.
disputarse , to wrangle with each other.	parecerse , to resemble each other.

137. THE RECIPROCAL VERB **ABRAZARSE** = TO EMBRACE EACH OTHER (OR ONE ANOTHER)

INFINITIVE: **abrazarse**, to embrace. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **abrazándose**, embracing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **abrazado**, embraced.

INDICATIVE MOOD *Present*
nos abrazamos we embrace
os abrazáis ye embrace
se abrazan they embrace
VV. se abrazan your honors embrace

Imperfect
nos abrazábamos we were embracing
os abrazabais ye were embracing
se abrazaban they were embracing
VV. se abrazaban your honors were embracing

Past Definite
nos abrazamos we embraced
os abrazasteis ye embraced
se abrazaron they embraced
VV. se abrazaron your honors embraced

Future
nos abrazaremos we shall embrace
os abrazaréis ye will embrace
se abrazarán they will embrace
VV. se abrazarán your honors will embrace

Conditional (Consequent)
nos abrazaríamos we should embrace
os abrazaríais ye would embrace
se abrazarían they would embrace
VV. se abrazarían your honors would embrace

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE
abrazaos embrace (ye)
abracémonos let us embrace
abrácese let them embrace
abrázense VV. embrace, your honors

COMP. INFINIT.: **haberse abrazado**, to have embraced each other. COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose abrazado**, having embraced each other.

INDICATIVE MOOD
nos hemos abrazado, etc. we have embraced, etc.
nos habíamos abrazado, etc. we had embraced, etc.
nos hubiéramos abrazado, etc. (when) we had embraced, etc.
nos habremos abrazado, etc. we shall have embraced, etc.
nos habríamos abrazado, etc. we should have embraced, etc.

INDICATIVE MOOD *Present*
nos abracemos that we embrace
os abracéis that ye embrace
se abracen that they embrace
VV. se abracen that your honors embrace

Imperfect (First Form)
nos abrazáramos that we should embrace
os abrazarais that ye should embrace
se abrazaran that they should embrace
VV. se abrazaran that your honors should embrace

Imperfect (Second Form)
nos abrazásemos that we embraced
os abrazáseis that ye embraced
se abrazasen that they embraced
VV. se abrazasen that your honors embraced

Future
nos abrazáremos that we embrace
os abrazaréis that ye embrace
se abrazarán that they embrace
VV. se abrazarán that your honors embrace

Conditional (Antecedent)
nos abrazaríamos that we should embrace
os abrazaríais that ye should embrace
se abrazarían that they should embrace
VV. se abrazarían that your honors should embrace

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE
abrazaos do (ye) not embrace
abracémonos let us not embrace
abrácese let them not embrace
abrázense VV. do not embrace, your honors

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose abrazado**, having embraced each other.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD
nos hayamos abrazado, etc. that we have embraced, etc.
nos hubiéramos abrazado, etc. that we should have embraced, etc.
nos hubiésemos abrazado, etc. that we had embraced, etc.
nos hubiéramos abrazado, etc. that we had or should have embraced, etc.
nos hubiésemos abrazado, etc. that we have or shall have embraced, etc.

COND. **nos hubiéramos abrazado**, etc. that we should have embraced, etc.

138. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB SER = TO BE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: ser, to be. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: siendo, being. PAST PARTICIPLE: sido, been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

soy I am
eres thou art
es he is
V. es your honor is
somos we are
sois ye are
son they are
VV. son your honors are

Imperfect

era I was
eras thou wast
era he was
V. era your honor was
éramos we were
erais ye were
eran they were
VV. eran your honors were

Past Definite (when)

fui I was
fuiste thou wast
fué he was
V. fué your honor was
fuimos we were
fuisteis ye were
fueron they were
VV. fueron your honors were

Future

seré I shall be
serás thou wilt be
será he will be
V. será your honor will be
seremos we shall be
seréis ye will be
serán they will be
VV. serán your honors will be

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

sea that I be
seas that thou be
sea that he be
V. sea that your honor be
seamos that we be
seais that ye be
sean that they be
VV. sean that your honors be

Imperfect (First Form)

fuera that I should be
fueras that thou shouldst be
fuera that he should be
V. fuera that your honor should be
fuéramos that we should be
fuerais that ye should be
fueran that they should be
VV. fueran that your honors should be

Imperfect (Second Form)

fuese that I were
fueses that thou were
fuese that he were
V. fuese that your honor were
fuésemos that we were
fuerais that ye were
fueran that they were
VV. fueran that your honors were

Future

fuebre I be
fueres thou be
fuere he be
V. fuere your honor be
fuéremos we be
fuerais ye be
fueren they be
VV. fueren your honors be

OR used to be.

OR may be, etc.

OR were.

OR should be, etc.

OR shall be.

si, cuando, men-
tras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while,
although, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

seria I should be
serías thou wouldst be
seria he would be
seriamos your honor would be
seriais we should be
serían they would be
serían your honors would be

Conditional (Antecedent)

fuera or **fuese**
fueras or **fueses**
fuera or **fuese**
fuéramos or **fusiéramos**
fuérais or **fusiérais**
fuéran or **fusiéran**

si {
 V.
 VV.

if {
 I should be
 thou shouldst be
 he should be
 your honor should be
 we should be
 ye should be
 they should be
 your honors should be

or
 were, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

sé	be (thou)	no seas	be (thou) not
sed	be (ye)	no seáis	be (ye) not
sea	let me be	no sea	let me not be
sea	let him be	no sea	let him not be
sea V.	be, your honor	no sea V.	be not, your honor
seamos	let us be	no seamos	let us not be
sean	let them be	no sean	let them not be
sean VV.	be, your honors	no sean VV.	be not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sido**, to have been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he sido**, etc. I have been, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había sido**, etc. I had been, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo sido**, etc. (when) I had been, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré sido**, etc. I shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría sido**, etc. I should have been, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sido**, having been.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya sido**, etc. that I have or may have been, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera sido**, etc. that I should have or had been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (3rd form) **hubiese sido**, etc. that I had or should have been, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere sido**, etc. that I have or shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese sido**, etc. that I should have or had been, etc.

There are two verbs meaning 'to be,' **ser** and **estar**. **Ser** is used: first, when the attribute expressed by the predicate *adjective* is essential and inherent — not temporary or accidental. Hence a predicate noun always requires **ser**. Second, to form the true passive voice.

139. CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERB **SER AMADO** = TO BE LOVED
SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **ser** { **amado -a** } to be loved. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **siendo** { **amados -as** } being loved. PAST PART.: **amado -a -os -as**, loved.
INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

soy amado -a I am loved
eres amado -a thou art loved
es amado -a he is loved
V. **es amado -a** your honor is loved
somos amados -as we are loved
sois amados -as ye are loved
VV. **son amados -as** your honors are loved

Imperfect

era amado -a I was being loved
eras amado -a thou wast being loved
era amado -a he was being loved
V. **era amado -a** your honor was being loved
éramos amados -as we were being loved
erais amados -as ye were being loved
VV. **eran amados -as** your honors were being loved

Past Definite

fui amado -a I was loved
fuieste amado -a thou wast loved
fué amado -a he was loved
V. **fué amado -a** your honor was loved
fuimos amados -as we were loved
fuisteis amados -as they were loved
VV. **fueron amados -as** your honors were loved

Future

seré amado -a I shall be loved.
serás amado -a thou wilt be loved
será amado -a he will be loved
V. **será amado -a** your honor will be loved
seremos amados -as we shall be loved
seréis amados -as ye will be loved
VV. **serán amados -as** your honors will be loved

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

sea amado -a that I be loved
seas amado -a that thou be loved
V. **seas amado -a** that he be loved
seamos amados -as that your honor be loved
seáis amados -as that we be loved
VV. **sean amados -as** that ye be loved

Present

sean amados -as that your honors be loved
VV. **sean amados -as** that your honors be loved

Imperfect (First Form)

fuera amado -a that I should be loved
fueras amado -a that thou shouldst be loved
V. **fueras amado -a** that he should be loved
fuéramos amados -as that your honor should be loved
fuerais amados -as that we should be loved
VV. **fueran amados -as** that ye should be loved

Imperfect (Second Form)

fuese amado -a that I should be loved
fueses amado -a that thou were loved
V. **fueses amado -a** that he were loved
fuésemos amados -as that your honor were loved
fueseis amados -as that we were loved
VV. **fuesen amados -as** that ye were loved

Future

fuere amado -a that I be loved
fueres amado -a that thou be loved
V. **fueres amado -a** that he be loved
fueremos amados -as that your honor be loved
fueréis amados -as that we be loved
VV. **fueren amados -as** that ye be loved

or used to be loved.

or should be loved, etc.

or shall be loved, etc.

si cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while, although, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

sería amado -a I should be loved
serias amado -a thou wouldst be loved
seria amado -a he would be loved
seria amado -a your honor would be loved
 V. **seríamos amados -as** we should be loved
seriais amados -as ye would be loved
serían amados -as they would be loved
serían amados -as your honors would be loved
 VV. **serían amados -as**

fuera amado -a or **fuere amado -a**
fuera amado -a or **fuere amado -a**
fuera amado -a or **fuere amado -a**
 V. **fuera amado -a** or **fuere amado -a**
fuéramos amados -as or **fuésemos amados -as**
fuérais amados -as or **fuésets amados -as**
fuéran amados -as or **fuésen amados -as**
 VV. **fuéran amados -as** or **fuésen amados -as**

Conditional (Antecedent)

I should be loved
 thou shouldst be loved
 he should be loved
 your honor should be loved
 we should be loved
 ye should be loved
 they should be loved
 your honors should be loved

sé amado -a let me be loved
sed amados -as let him, her be loved
sea amado -a be loved, your honor
sea amado -a let us be loved
seamos amados -as let them be loved
sean amados -as let them be loved
 VV. **sean amados -as**

be (thou) loved
 be (ye) loved
 let me be loved
 let him, her be loved
 be loved, your honor
 let us be loved
 let them be loved
 be loved, your honors

no seas amado -a let me not be loved
no seas amados -as let him, her not be loved
no sea amado -a be not loved, your honor
no sea amado -a let us not be loved
no seamos amados -as let them not be loved
no sean amados -as let them not be loved
 VV. **no sean amados -as**

be (thou) not loved
 be (ye) not loved
 let me not be loved
 let him, her not be loved
 be not loved, your honor
 let us not be loved
 let them not be loved
 be not loved, your honors

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber sido** { **amado -a** } to have been loved.
amados -as

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he sido amado -a**, etc. I have been loved, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **había sido amado -a**, etc. I had been loved, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo sido amado -a**, etc. (when) I had been loved, etc.
 Comp. Fut **habré sido amado -a**, etc. I shall have been loved, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habría sido amado -a**, etc. I should have been loved, etc.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sido** { **amado -a** } having been loved.
amados -as

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya sido amado -a**, etc. that I have or may have been loved, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera sido amado -a**, etc. that I should have or had been loved, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese sido amado -a**, etc. that I had or should have been loved, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere sido amado -a**, etc. that I have or shall have been loved, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera** or **hubiese sido** that I should have or had been loved, etc.
amado -a, etc.

NOTE. — The passive voice in Spanish is formed by adding the past participle of an active transitive verb to the different forms of the auxiliary verb **ser**, to be.

The past participle varies like any adjective in **o**, and agrees with the subject in gender and number.

It should be remembered that the past participle of a verb conjugated with **haber** never varies; hence **sido** is invariable. But, in the compound tenses, **amado** varies, since it is conjugated with **ser**, and not with **haber**, **he sido** being the compound present of **ser**.

REFLEXIVE SUBSTITUTE FOR THE PASSIVE

140. In Spanish, as in French, the use of the passive is avoided as much as possible. In its place they prefer to use the verb reflexively, or else in the indefinite third person plural, with no subject expressed. For example, 'the books are sold,' *se venden los libros*, in place of *los libros son vendidos*; although the latter is correct grammatically and could be used. And again, 'it is said' = *se dice* or *dicen*; the latter, *dicen*, is the exact equivalent for our English 'they say,' and is used in the same way.

141. The use of the reflexive form for the passive comes under two heads :

1. When the subject of the passive verb is a thing or an inanimate object, then the reflexive substitute has the same subject as the passive verb. For example, 'the houses are sold,' *se venden las casas*; 'Spanish is spoken here,' *aquí se habla español*; 'it is said,' *se dice*; 'it has been said that they would come,' *se ha dicho que vendrían*. In these cases, as the subject is a thing, no possible ambiguity can arise in the use of the reflexive in place of the passive, for the literal translation of *se venden las casas* is, 'the houses sell themselves'; and, as it is impossible for the houses to sell themselves, the real meaning can only be, 'the houses are sold.'

2. When the subject of the passive verb is a person or an animate object, then the subject of the passive verb cannot be made the subject of the reflexive substitute on account of the ambiguity that would arise. For example, 'the man was killed,' if made reflexive with the subject the same, would be, *se mató el hombre*, which would mean 'the man killed himself,' and not 'the man was killed.' In this case the subject of the passive verb is made the *object* of the reflexive verb, and we have *se mató al hombre*. This can be explained or translated literally in two ways: *first*, considering the verb as impersonal, it would be, 'it killed itself to the man,' *se* being the direct object and man the indirect object; *second*, the subject of the reflexive verb may be considered to be *uno, alguien*, or some

other indefinite subject, man being the direct object, and *se* the indirect object and at the same time a superfluous or ethical dative, in which case the literal translation would be, 'one (or somebody) killed the man for himself.' Either explanation of this construction is permissible and will explain the variation in the object pronouns which are sometimes direct and sometimes indirect in form; for example, *le* and *les* are always used in place of *lo* and *los*, but in all other cases the direct objective forms are used. Furthermore, in this construction the redundant pronouns are almost always used:

The man was seen, *se le vió al hombre*
 The men were seen, *se les vió á los hombres*
 The woman was seen, *se la vió á la mujer*
 The women were seen, *se las vió á las mujeres*
 They were seen, *se les (las) vió á ellos (á ellas)*
 Let the man be killed, *mátese al hombre*
 Let them be killed, *máteseles (las) á ellos (á ellas)*

Mátesemeles, let them be killed (for me): this meaning is the same as the preceding, the only difference being the use of a superfluous dative *me*, for me.

There is no doubt but that the Spaniards unconsciously use this *se* as a subject, about equivalent in meaning to the French *on*; it can always be translated in that way and give a correct translation of the Spanish expression; as, *se mató al hombre*, 'one killed the man' = *on tua l'homme*. But it must be remembered that grammatically it is always an object pronoun, as is seen by its position in the imperative.

NOTE. — There is a slight shade of difference in meaning between *se dice*, the reflexive substitute, and *dicen*, the indefinite third person plural substitute: *se dice* meaning 'it is said,' where the speaker is included with others; whereas in *dicen* the speaker is not included. Practically the same difference exists in English between "it is said" and "they say."

IMPERSONAL VERBS

142. Impersonal verbs have already been defined to be verbs that have neither subject nor object, and usually refer to some phenomena of nature. They are conjugated only in

the infinitive, present participle, past participle, and in the third person singular of the other moods and tenses. Impersonal verbs may be either essential or accidental. Essential impersonal verbs are used only as impersonal verbs, and always refer to some phenomena of nature. The principal essential impersonal verbs are:

Alborear , to dawn	Llover , to rain
Amanecer , to dawn	Lloviznar , to drizzle
Anochece , to grow dark	Nevar , to snow
Deshelar , to thaw	Relampaguear , to lighten
Granizar , to hail	Tronar , to thunder
Helar , to freeze	Ventear , to blow

NOTE.—In figurative language, these verbs may have a subject: *la artillería truená*, the artillery thunders.

143. Accidental impersonal verbs are ordinary verbs that may sometimes be used impersonally. They may have a neuter subject, *ello*, it, expressed for emphasis, when not used in describing phenomena of nature.

The principal accidental impersonal verbs are:

- Acaecer**, **acontecer**, **suceder**, to happen: (*ello*) *acaeece*, *acontece*, *sucede*, it happens.
- Bastar**, to be sufficient: (*ello*) *basta*, it is sufficient.
- Constar**, to be evident: (*ello*) *consta*, it is evident.
- Convenir**, to suit: (*ello*) *conviene*, it suits.
- Estar**, to be: *está nevando*, it is snowing.
- Haber**, there to be: *hay hombres*, there are men; *¿cuánto hay de aquí?* how far is it from here?
- Hacer**, to be: *hace un mes*, it is one month (one month ago); *hace sol*, it is sunny.
- Importar**, to matter, to be important: (*ello*) *importa*, it matters, is important.
- Ser**, to be: *es verdad*, *necesario*, it is true, necessary; *son las dos*, it is two o'clock.

Some of these verbs may also be employed in the third person plural, and may agree with a subject: *muchos milagros me sucedieron*, many miracles happened to me.

Under this head also comes the impersonal substitute in permanent reflexive verbs: *me alegre*, I rejoice, or *se me alegre*, I rejoice, — (lit.) it rejoices itself to me.

144. THE IMPERSONAL VERB HABER = THERE TO BE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **haber**, there to be. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo**, there being.
 PAST PARTICIPLE: **habido**, there having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	
	<i>Present</i>		<i>Present</i>
hay	there is <i>or</i> there are	haya	that there be <i>or</i> may be.
	<i>Imperfect</i>		<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>
había	there was <i>or</i> there were	hubiera	that there should be <i>or</i> were
	<i>Past Definite</i>		<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>
hubo	there was <i>or</i> there were	hubiese	that there were <i>or</i> should be.
	<i>Future</i>		<i>Future</i>
habrá	there will be	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., hubiere ,	if, when, while, although, etc., there be <i>or</i> shall be
	<i>Conditional (Consequent)</i>		<i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i>
habría	there would be	si hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese ,	if there should be, <i>or</i> were
IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE			
haya	let there be	no haya	let there not be

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber habido**, there to have been.
 COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo habido**, there having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	ha habido	there has <i>or</i> have been
Comp. Imp.	había habido	there had been
Comp. Past Def.	hubo habido	(when) there had been
Comp. Fut.	habrá habido	there will have been
Comp. Cond.	habría habido	there would have been

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya habido	that there were <i>or</i> may have been
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiera habido	that there should have been <i>or</i> had been
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese habido	that there had been <i>or</i> should have been
Comp. Fut.	hubiere habido	that there have been <i>or</i> shall have been
Comp. Cond.	hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese habido	that there should have been <i>or</i> had been

NOTE. — The only variation from the auxiliary **haber** is in the third person singular present indicative — **hay** instead of **ha**. In the compound present indicative, however, **ha** is used. In the personal verb, the imperative singular and plural **he, hed**, in the meaning of *behold*, are still found, with the adverbs **aquí, ahí** and **allí**, and the pronoun objects *me, te, le, la, lo, nos, os, los, las*.

heme aquí, here I am.
helo ahí, there it is.

hednos aquí, here we are.
helos, helas ahí, there they are.

145. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **GRANIZAR** = TO HAIL

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **granizar**, to hail.PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **granizando**, hailing.PAST PARTICIPLE: **granizado**, hailed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

*Present***graniza** it hails*Imperfect***granizaba** it was hailing *or* used to hail*Past Definite***granizó** it hailed*Future***granizará** it will hail*Conditional (Consequent)***granizaría** it would hail

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

*Present***granice** that it hail *or* may hail*Imperfect (First Form)***granizara** that it should hail *or* hailed*Imperfect (Second Form)***granizase** that it hailed *or* should hail.*Future*si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **granizare**, if, when, while, although, etc., it hail *or* shall hail*Conditional (Antecedent)*si **granizara** *or* **granizase**, if it should hail *or* hailed

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

granice let it hail**no granice** let it not hail

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber granizado**, to have hailed.COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo granizado**, having hailed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.

ha granizado

it has hailed

Comp. Imp.

había granizado

it had hailed

Comp. Past Def.

hubo granizado

(when) it had hailed

Comp. Fut.

habrá granizado

it shall have hailed

Comp. Cond.

habría granizado

it should have hailed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.

haya granizadothat it have *or* may have hailed

Comp. Imp. (1st form)

hubiera granizadothat it should have *or* had hailed

Comp. Imp. (2d form)

hubiese granizadothat it had *or* should have hailed

Comp. Fut.

hubiere granizadothat it have *or* shall have hailed

Comp. Cond.

hubiera *or* hubiese granizadothat it should have *or* had hailed146. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **LLOVER** = TO RAIN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **llover**, to rain.PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **lloviendo**, raining.PAST PARTICIPLE: **llovido**, rained.

INDICATIVE MOOD

*Present***lueve** it rains*Imperfect***llovía** it was raining *or* used to rain*Past Definite***llovió** it rained

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

*Present***lueva** that it rain *or* may rain*Imperfect (First Form)***lloviera** that it should rain *or* rained*Imperfect (Second Form)***lloviese** that it rained *or* should rain

Future
lloverá it will rain

Conditional (Consequent)
llovería it would rain

Future
si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **lloviere**, if, when, while, although, etc., it rain or shall rain

Conditional (Antecedent)
si **lloviera** or **lloviese**, if it should rain or rained.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

lloveva let it rain

no lloveva let it not rain

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber llovido**, to have rained.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo llovido**, having rained.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	ha llovido	it has rained
Comp. Imp.	había llovido	it had rained
Comp. Past Def.	hubo llovido	(when) it had rained
Comp. Fut.	habrá llovido	it shall have rained
Comp. Cond.	habría llovido	it should have rained

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya llovido	that it have or may have rained
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiera llovido	that it should have or had rained
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese llovido	that it had or should have rained
Comp. Fut.	hubiere llovido	that it have or shall have rained
Comp. Cond.	hubiera or hubiese llovido	that it should have or had rained

147. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **NEVAR** = TO SNOW

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **nevar**, to snow.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **nevando**, snowing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **nevado**, snowed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present
nieva it snows

Imperfect
nevaba it was snowing or used to snow

Past Definite
nevió it snowed

Present
nieve that it snow or may snow

Imperfect (First Form)
nevara that it should snow or snowed

Imperfect (Second Form)
nevase that it snowed or should snow

Future
nevará it will snow

Conditional (Consequent)
nevaría it would snow

Future
si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **nevare**, if, when, while, although, etc., it snow or shall snow

Conditional (Antecedent)
si **nevare** or **nevase**, if it should snow or snowed

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

nieve let it snow

no nieve let it not snow.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber nevado**, to have snowed.COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo nevado**, having snowed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	ha nevado	it has snowed
Comp. Imp.	habia nevado	it had snowed
Comp. Past Def.	hubo nevado	(when) it had snowed
Comp. Fut.	habrá nevado	it shall have snowed
Comp. Cond.	habria nevado	it should have snowed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya nevado	that it have <i>or</i> may have snowed
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiera nevado	that it should have <i>or</i> had snowed
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese nevado	that it had <i>or</i> should have snowed
Comp. Fut.	hubiere nevado	that it have <i>or</i> shall have snowed
Comp. Cond.	hubiera or hubiese nevado	that it should have <i>or</i> had snowed

148. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **RELAMPAGUEAR** = TO LIGHTEN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **relampaguear**, to lighten. PRES. PART.: **relampagueando**, lightening.PAST PARTICIPLE: **relampagueado**, lightened.

INDICATIVE MOOD

<i>Present</i>	
relampaguea	it lightens
<i>Imperfect</i>	
relampagueaba	it was lightening <i>or</i> used to lighten
<i>Past Definite</i>	
relampagueó	it lightened
<i>Future</i>	
relampagueará	it will lighten
<i>Conditional (Consequent)</i>	
relampaguearía	it would lighten

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<i>Present</i>	
relampaguee	that it lighten <i>or</i> may lighten
<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>	
relampagueara	that it should lighten <i>or</i> lightened
<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>	
relampaguease	that it lightened <i>or</i> should lighten
<i>Future</i>	
si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.,	relampagueare , if it lighten <i>or</i> shall lighten
<i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i>	
si	relampagueara or relampaguease , if it should lighten <i>or</i> lightened

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

relampaguee	let it lighten	no relampaguee	let it not lighten
--------------------	----------------	-----------------------	--------------------

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber relampagueado**, to have lightened.COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo relampagueado**, having lightened.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	ha relampagueado	it has lightened
Comp. Imp.	habia relampagueado	it had lightened
Comp. Past Def.	hubo relampagueado	(when) it had lightened
Comp. Fut.	habrá relampagueado	it shall have lightened
Comp. Cond.	habria relampagueado	it should have lightened

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya relampagueado	that it have <i>or</i> may have lightened
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiera relampagueado	that it should have <i>or</i> had lightened
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese relampagueado	that it had <i>or</i> should have lightened
Comp. Fut.	hubiere relampagueado	that it have <i>or</i> shall have lightened
Comp. Cond.	hubiera or hubiese relampagueado	that it should have <i>or</i> had lightened

149. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **AMANE CER**==TO DAWN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **amanecer**, to dawn. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **amaneciendo**, dawning.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **amanecido**, dawned.

INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	
	<i>Present</i>		<i>Present</i>
amanece	it dawns	amanezca	that it dawn <i>or</i> may dawn
	<i>Imperfect</i>		<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>
amanecía	it was dawning <i>or</i> used to dawn	amaneciera	that it should dawn <i>or</i> dawned
	<i>Past Definite</i>		<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>
amaneció	t dawned	amaneciese	that it dawned <i>or</i> should dawn
	<i>Future</i>		<i>Future</i>
amanecerá	it will dawn	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., amaneciere , if, when, while, although, etc., it dawn <i>or</i> shall dawn.	
	<i>Conditional (Consequent)</i>		<i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i>
amanecería	it would dawn	si amaneciera <i>or</i> amaneciese , if it should dawn <i>or</i> dawned	
IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE			
amanezca	let it dawn	no amanezca	let it not dawn

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber amanecido**, to have dawned.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo amanecido**, having dawned.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	ha amanecido	it has dawned
Comp. Imp.	había amanecido	it had dawned
Comp. Past Def.	hubo amanecido	(when) it had dawned
Comp. Fut.	habrá amanecido	it shall have dawned
Comp. Cond.	habría amanecido	it should have dawned

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya amanecido	that it have <i>or</i> may have dawned
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiera amanecido	that it should have <i>or</i> had dawned
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese amanecido	that it had <i>or</i> should have dawned
Comp. Fut.	hubiere amanecido	that it have <i>or</i> shall have dawned
Comp. Cond.	hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese amanecido	that it should have <i>or</i> had dawned

NOTE. — **Amanecer**, to dawn, and its companion verb **anoche cer**, to grow dusk, may be inflected throughout with a personal meaning: *amanecimos en Nueva York*, it was dawn when we reached New York; *anohecimos en Nueva York*, it was dark when we reached New York.

IRREGULAR VERBS

150. We have seen that by dropping the endings *ar, er* or *ir* of the infinitive we obtain the stem of the verb.

We have also seen that in the regular verbs the stem never varies except for orthographic changes.

In irregular verbs the *inflectional endings* are the same (except in a few verbs) as in the regular verbs; but the *stem* varies from that in the infinitive so as to assume sometimes two, sometimes three different forms.

Knowing these two or three different forms of the stem and what the tenses are that are built up on them, we can conjugate the whole verb by adding the usual fixed inflexional endings.

These three stems are: 1st, the stem of the infinitive or *present stem*; 2d, the stem of the past definite, or *past definite stem*; and third, the full infinitive itself, called for convenience the *future stem*.

By comparison of all the irregular verbs it can be demonstrated that upon these three stems the following tenses are built up respectively:

<i>Present Stem</i>	{	Infinitive
		Present Participle (usually)
		Past Participle
		Present Indicative
		Imperfect Indicative
		Present Subjunctive
		Imperative
<i>Past Definite Stem</i>	{	Present Participle (occasionally)
		Past Definite Indicative
		Imperfect Subjunctives
		Future Subjunctive
<i>Future Stem</i>	{	Conditional Subjunctive
		Future Indicative
		Conditional Indicative

151. Whenever an irregularity occurs in the future stem it is present *throughout* the future and conditional tenses of the indicative.

152. An irregularity *never* occurs *throughout* the tenses of the present stem; and an irregularity *may* or *may not* occur *throughout* the tenses of the past definite stem.

153. When an irregularity occurs in the present or past definite stems *under certain conditions only* (depending on tonic accent and inflectional ending), this irregularity will be found to exist in the tenses built up on those stems, when those conditions are fulfilled, *and not otherwise*.

154. For convenience, when a stem receives the tonic accent, it will be called a tonic stem; and when a stem does not receive the tonic accent it will be called an atonic stem.

The stem-vowel is the vowel of the stem nearest the ending.

155. The learner will be greatly aided in mastering irregular verbs if he remembers that the present subjunctive always comes from the first person singular present indicative, by changing the ending *o* to *a* or *e*, as, *caber, quepo, quepa*; *sonar, sueno, suene*; and the other tenses of the subjunctive always come from the third person plural past definite by changing *ron* to *ra, se, re*, as, *poder, pudieron, pudiera, pudiese, pudiere*. There are only a few irregular *futures*; only a few irregular second person singulars of the imperative.

156. Irregular verbs are divided into seven classes:

First Class

This class comprises verbs in *ar* and *er*, and one in *ir*, having the stem-vowels *e* and *o*. Their irregularity consists in the expansion of the stem-vowel *e* into its diphthong *ie*, or of *o* into its diphthong *ue*, when the stem is *tonic*. This irregularity will therefore occur in the present stem only, and there only as follows:

1st, 2d and 3d Person Singular and 3d Person Plural	}	of	{	Present Indicative, Present Subjunctive, Imperative;
---	---	----	---	--

for in all other cases the stem is atonic.

There are 341 verbs in this class, subdivided as follows:

ar, stem-vowel <i>e</i>	. . .	156	. . . .	(model <i>pensar</i> , p. 108).
ar, stem-vowel <i>o</i>	. . .	126	. . . .	(model <i>sonar</i> , p. 114).
er, stem-vowel <i>e</i>	. . .	27	. . . .	(model <i>perder</i> , p. 118).
er, stem-vowel <i>o</i>	. . .	31	. . . .	(model <i>mover</i> , p. 120).
ir, stem-vowel <i>e</i>	. . .	1	. . . .	(<i>discernir</i> , p. 126).

Second Class

157. This class comprises verbs in *ir* only, having the stem-vowels *e* and *o*. Their irregularity consists in the expansion of the stem-vowel *e* into its diphthong *ie*, or of *o* into its diphthong *ue*, when the stem is tonic, exactly as with verbs of the first class. In addition, however, the stem-vowel *e* becomes *i*, or the stem-vowel *o* becomes *u*, when the stem is *atonic* and is followed by *a*, *ie* or *ió*. The latter change takes place as follows:

Present Participle.
 First and Second Persons Plural Present Subjunctive.
 First Person Plural Imperative.
 Third Person Singular and Plural Past Definite.
 Imperfect Subjunctives.
 Future Subjunctive.

There are fifty verbs in this class, subdivided as follows:

ir, stem-vowel *e* 43 . . . (model *sentir*, p. 128).
ir, stem-vowel *o* 7 . . . (model *morir*, p. 134).

Third Class

158. This class comprises verbs ending in *ir* only, having the stem-vowel *e*. Their irregularity consists in *e* becoming *i* when the stem is *tonic* or when followed by *a*, *ie*, or *ió*, viz., in

Present Indicative, except First and Second Persons Plural.
 Present Subjunctive.
 Imperative, except Second Person Plural.
 Present Participle.
 Past Definite, Third Person Singular and Plural.
 Imperfect and Future Subjunctives.

There are 54 verbs in this class (model *servir*, p. 136).

Fourth Class

159. This class comprises verbs in *acer*, *ecer*, *ocer*, *ucir*. Their irregularity consists in inserting a *z* before the *c* when followed by *a* or *o*, viz., in

First Person Singular Present Indicative.
 Throughout Present Subjunctive.
 Imperative derived from Present Subjunctive.

There are 210 verbs in this class, sub-divided as follows:

acer, **ecer**, **ocer** 203 . . . (model *conocer*, p. 140).
ucir 7 . . . (model *lucir*, p. 144).

Fifth Class

160. This class comprises verbs in *uir*, both vowels being sounded—that is, it does not include verbs in *guir*, *quir*. Their irregularity consists in inserting *y* before the ending when the stem-vowel *u* gets the tonic accent or is followed by *a* or *o*, viz., in

Present Indicative, except First and Second Persons Plural.
Present Subjunctive.
Imperative derived from Present Subjunctive.

In addition, this class of verbs undergoes the orthographic change of *i* into *y* of the diphthongal endings *ie*, *iô* in the past definite stem. (See *creer*, p. 68.)

There are 38 verbs in this class, subdivided as follows:

uir (not *guir*, *quir*) 36 . . (model *atribuir*, p. 146).
guir 2 . . (model *arguir*, p. 148).

Sixth Class

161. This class consists of fourteen verbs in *ar*, *er* and *ir* and their compounds, with *irregular past definites*. The tonic accent in the first and third persons singular past definite, is on the stem instead of on the ending as in other verbs. These are as follows:

1. andar	5. estar (see p.	7. hacer	11. saber
2. caber	72)	8. poder	12. tener
3. decir	6. haber (see p.	9. poner	13. traer
4. traducir*	20)	10. querer	14. venir

Seventh Class

162. This class consists of ten very irregular verbs in *ar*, *er* and *ir* and their compounds, incapable of classification under any other head. These verbs are as follows:

1. asir	3. dar	5. oír	7. ser (see p. 92)	9. ver
2. caer	4. ir	6. salir	8. valer	10. yacer

* And other compounds of *ducir*, which is now obsolete.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, e = ie, when tonic *

163. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB PENSAR = TO THINK

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **pensar**, to think.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **pensando**, thinking.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **pensado**, thought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

I think (do think, am thinking)
 thou thinkest
 he thinks
 your honor thinks
 we think
 ye think
 they think
 your honors think

p'nsa
p'nsas
p'nsa
p'nsa
pensamos
pensáis
p'nsan
p'nsan

V.
 VV.

Imperfect

I was thinking
 thou wast thinking
 he was thinking
 your honor was thinking
 we were thinking
 ye were thinking
 they were thinking
 your honors were thinking

pensaba
pensabas
pensaba
pensabamos
pensabais
pensaban
pensaban

V.
 VV.

} or used to think.

Present

that I think
 that thou think
 that he think
 that your honor think
 that we think
 that ye think
 that they think
 that your honors think

} or may think,
 etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should think
 that thou shouldst think
 that he should think
 that your honor should think
 that we should think
 that ye should think
 that they should think
 that your honors should think

} or thought.

Past Definite

I thought
 thou didst think
 he thought
 your honor thought
 we thought
 ye thought
 they thought
 your honors thought

pensé
pensaste
pensó
pensamos
pensasteis
pensaron
pensaron

V.
 VV.

} or should think,
 etc.

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I thought
 that thou thought
 that he thought
 that your honor thought
 that we thought
 that ye thought
 that they thought
 that your honors thought

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

pensaré I shall think
pensarás thou wilt think
pensará he will think
pensaremos your honor will think
pensaréis we shall think
pensarán they will think
VV. pensarán your honors will think

Conditional (Consequent)

pensaría I should think
pensarías thou wouldst think
pensaría he would think
pensaríamos your honor would think
pensaríais we should think
pensarían ye would think
VV. pensarían they would think
pensarían your honors would think

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

pensare
pensares
pensare
pensáremos
pensaréis
pensaren

Future

I think
 thou think
 he think
 we think
 ye think
 they think
 your honors think

or shall think,
 etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

pensara or **pensase** I should think
pensaras or **pensases** thou shouldst think
pensara or **pensase** he should think
pensáramos or **pensásemos** your honor should think
pensarais or **pensáseis** we should think
pensaran or **pensasen** ye should think
VV. pensarán or **VV. pensaren** they should think
VV. pensarán or **VV. pensaren** your honors should think

or thought,

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

piénsa think (thou)
pensad think (ye)
piénse let me think
piénse let him think
piénse V. think, your honor
pensemos let us think
piénsen let them think
piénsen VV. think, your honors

no pienses think (thou) not
no piénsis think (ye) not
no piénse let me not think
no piénse let him not think
no piénse V. think not, your honor
no pensemos let us not think
no piénsen let them not think
no piénsen VV. think not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber pensado**, to have thought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

he pensado, etc. I have thought, etc.
había pensado, etc. I had thought, etc.
hubo pensado, etc. (when) I had thought, etc.
habré pensado, etc. I shall have thought, etc.
habría pensado, etc. I should have thought, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo pensado**, having thought

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya pensado, etc. that I have or may have thought, etc.
hubiera pensado, etc. that I should have or had thought, etc.
hubiere pensado, etc. that I had or should have thought, etc.
hubiera or hubiese that I have or should have thought, etc.
hubiera or hubiese that I should have or had thought, etc.

The derivatives **compensar**, **recompensar** are regular.

Conjugate in the same manner as pensar, p. 108.

abnegar	dentar	despernar	hacendar	replegar ⁶
acertar	derrenegar	despertar	helar	requebrar
acrecentar	derrengar	despezar ⁴	herbar	resegar
adecentar	desacertar	desplegar	herrar	resembrar
adestrar	desaferrar	destentar	incensar	resquebrar
alebrarse	desalentar	desterrar	infernar	restregar
alentar	desapretar	desventar	inhestar	retemblar
aliquebrar	desarrendar	dezmar	invernar	retentar
apacentar	desasentar	dispertar	jimenzar <i>or</i> simen-	reventar
apernar	desasosegar	emparentar	manifestar ^[zar]	salpimentar
apretar	desatentar	empedrar	melar	sarmentar
arrendar	desaterrar	empellar	mentar ⁵	segar
asentar	desatravesar	empezar	merendar	sembrar
aserrar	desaventar	encentar	negar	sementar
asosegar	desconcertar	encerrar	nevar	sentar
atentar ¹	desdentar	encomendar	perniquebrar	serrar
aterrar ²	desempedrar	encubertar	plegar	sobresembrar
atestar ³	desencerrar	endentar	quebrar	sobreventar
atravesar	desenterrar	enhambrentar	reapretar	sorregar
avalentar	desferrar	enhestar	reaventar	sosegar
aventar	desgovernar	enlenzar	recalentar	soterrar
bregar	deshelar	enmelar	recentar	subarrendar
calentar	desherber	enmendar	recomendar	temblar
cegar	desherrar	ensangrentar	reencomendar	tentar ⁷
cerrar	desinvernar	enterrar	refregar	trasegar
cimentar	deslendar	entrepernar	regar	trasfregar
comenzar	desmelar	escarmentar	regimentar	travesar
concertar	desmembrar	estregar	reherrar	trapezar
confesar	desnegar	ferrar	remendar	ventar
decentar	desnevar	fregar	renegar	
denegar	despedrar	governar	repensar	

¹ *Atentar* is regular when it means 'to attempt a crime.'

² *Aterrar* is regular when it means 'to terrify' (from *terror*); when it means 'to fell to the ground' (from *tierra*) it is irregular.

³ *Atestar* is regular when it means 'to testify.'

⁴ *Despezar* is regular when it means 'to make thinner at the end.'

⁵ *Comentar, dementar*, derivatives from *mentar*, are regular.

⁶ *Replegar* is regular when it means 'to fold again.'

⁷ *Contentar, detentar, intentar*, derivatives from *tentar*, are regular.

Conjugate in the same manner as sonar, p. 114.

absonar	contracordar	dolar	reforzar
abuñolar	costar	emporcar	regoldar
aclocar	degollar	enclocar	rehollar
acollar	demostrar	encontrar	remolar
acordar ¹	denostar	encorar	repoblar
acornar	derrocar	encordar	reprobar
acostar	desacollar	encornar	resollar
afollar	desacordar	encovar	resonar
aforar ²	desaforar	engorar	retostar
agorar	desamoblar	engrosar	retronar
almorzar	desaprobar	enrodar	revolar
alongar	descolgar	ensalmorar	revolcarse
amoblar	descollar	ensoñar	rodar
amolar	desconsolar	entorlar	rogar ⁶
apercollar	descontar	escolar	sobresolar
apostar ³	descordar	esforzar	solar
aprobar	descornar	follar ⁵	soldar
asolar	desencordar	forzar	soltar
asoldar	desengrosar	holgar	sollar
asonar	desflocar	hollar	sonrodarse
atronar	desmajolar	improbar	soñar
avergonzar	desolar	malsonar	tostar
azolar	desoldar	mancornar	trascolar
clocar	desollar	moblar	trascordarse
colar	desosar ⁴	mostrar	trasoñar
colgar	desovar	poblar	trastrocar
comprobar	despoblar	probar	travolar
concordar	destrocar	recolar	trocar
consolar	desvergonzarse	recontar	tronar
consonar	discordar	recordar	volar
contar	disonar	recostar	volcar

¹ *Acordar* is regular when it means 'to tune' a musical instrument.

² *Aforar* is regular when it means 'to gauge' or 'appraise.'

³ *Apostar* is regular when it means 'to post' troops, guards, etc.

⁴ *Desosar* is regular when it means 'not to dare.'

⁵ *Follar* is regular when it means 'to shape with leaves.'

⁶ All derivatives from *rogar* are regular.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, e = ie = ye, when tonic *

164. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ERRAR = TO MISS

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **errar**, to miss.
INDICATIVE MOOD

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **errando**, missing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **errado**, missed.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **errando**, missing.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yerro I miss (do miss, am missing)
erraras thou missest
yerra he misses
V. **yerra** your honor misses
erramos we miss
erráis ye miss
yerran they miss
VV. **yerran** your honors miss

yerro that I miss
yerras that thou missest
yerra that he misses
V. **yerra** that your honor miss
erramos that we miss
erráis that ye miss
yerran that they miss
VV. **yerran** that your honors miss

Imperfect

erraba I was missing
errabas thou wast missing
erraba he was missing
V. **errabamos** we were missing
errabais ye were missing
erraban they were missing
VV. **erraban** your honors were missing

Imperfect (First Form)

errara that I should miss
erraras that thou shouldst miss
errara that he should miss
V. **erraramos** that your honor should miss
errarais that we should miss
erraran that ye should miss
VV. **erraran** that they should miss
that your honors should miss

Past Definite

erró I missed
erraste thou didst miss
erró he missest
V. **erramos** your honor missed
errasteis ye missest
erraron they missed
VV. **erraron** your honors missed

Imperfect (Second Form)

errase that I missed
errases that thou missest
errase that he missest
V. **errásemos** that your honor missed
errásteis that we missed
errasen that ye missed
VV. **errasen** that they missed
that your honors missed

* As by Spanish orthography the diphthong **ie** should not begin a syllable, initial **ie** in this verb changes to **ye**. Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I shall miss thou wilt miss he will miss your honor will miss we shall miss ye will miss they will miss your honors will miss</p> <p>erraré errarás errará erraremos erraréis errarán VV. errarán</p> <p>V.</p> <p>si</p> <p>errara erraras errara erráramos errarais erraran VV. errarían</p> <p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>I should miss thou wouldst miss he would miss your honor would miss we should miss ye would miss they would miss your honors would miss</p> <p>erraría errarías erraría erráramos errarais errarian VV. errarían</p> <p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>I should miss thou shouldst miss he should miss your honor should miss we should miss ye should miss they should miss your honors should miss</p> <p>errase errases errase V. errase errásemos erráseis errasen or VV. errasen</p>	<p>if, when, while, although, etc.</p> <p>errare errares errare V. errare erráremus erráretis errarent VV. errarent</p> <p>si, cuando, mten- tras, aunque, etc.</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I miss thou miss he miss your honor miss we miss ye miss they miss your honors miss</p> <p>errare errares errare V. errare erráremus erráretis errarent VV. errarent</p> <p>or</p> <p>errase errases errase V. errase errásemos erráseis errasen or VV. errasen</p>	<p>or shall miss, etc.</p> <p>or missed.</p>
---	---	---	--

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p>¡errad ¡errad</p> <p><i>¡erre</i> <i>¡erre</i> <i>¡erre</i> V. <i>¡erremos</i> <i>¡erren</i> <i>¡erren</i> VV.</p>	<p>miss (thou) miss (ye)</p> <p>no ¡erres no ¡erres no ¡erre no ¡erre no ¡erremos no ¡erren no ¡erren VV.</p>	<p>miss (thou) not miss (ye) not</p> <p>let me not miss let him not miss miss not, your honor let us not miss let them not miss miss not, your honors</p>
---	--	---

COMPOUND TENSES

<p>COMPOUND INFINITIVE: haber errado, to have missed.</p> <p>INDICATIVE MOOD</p> <p>Comp. Pres. he errado, etc. I have missed, etc. Comp. Imp. haya errado, etc. I had missed, etc. Comp. Past Def. hubiera errado, etc. (when) I had missed, etc. Comp. Fut. habrá errado, etc. I shall have missed, etc. Comp. Cond. habría errado, etc. I should have missed, etc.</p>	<p>COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: habiendo errado, having missed.</p> <p>SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD</p> <p>Comp. Pres. haya errado, etc. that I have or may have missed, etc. Comp. Imp. (1st form) hubiera errado, etc. that I should have or had missed, etc. Comp. Imp. (2d form) hubiese errado, etc. that I had or should have missed, etc. Comp. Fut. hubiere errado, etc. that I have or shall have missed, etc. Comp. Cond. hubiera or hubiese errado, etc. that I should have or had missed, etc.</p>
---	--

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, **o** = **ue**, when tonic *

165. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SONAR = TO SOUND

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **sonar**, to sound.PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sonando**, sounding.PAST PARTICIPLE: **sonado**, sounded.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I sound (do sound, am sounding)
 thou soundest
 he sounds
 your honor sounds
 we sound
 ye sound
 they sound
 your honors sound

sueno
suenas
suena
suena
sonamos
sonáis
suenan
suenan

Imperfect

I was sounding
 thou wast sounding
 he was sounding
 your honor was sounding
 we were sounding
 ye were sounding
 they were sounding
 your honors were sounding

sonaba
sonabas
sonaba
sonaba
sonabamos
sonabais
sonaban
sonaban

Past Definite

I sounded
 thou didst sound
 he sounded
 your honor sounded
 we sounded
 ye sounded
 they sounded
 your honors sounded

soné
sonaste
sonó
sonó
sonamos
sonasteis
sonaron
sonaron

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I sound
 that thou sound
 that he sound
 that your honor sound
 that we sound
 that ye sound
 that they sound
 that your honor sound

suene
suenes
suene
suene
sonemos
sonéis
suenen
suenen

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should sound
 that thou shouldst sound
 that he should sound
 that your honor should sound
 that we should sound
 that ye should sound
 that they should sound
 that your honors should sound

sonara
sonaras
sonara
sonara
sonáramos
sonarais
sonaran
sonaran

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I sounded
 that thou sounded
 that he sounded
 that your honor sounded
 that we sounded
 that ye sounded
 that they sounded
 that your honors sounded

sonase
sonases
sonase
sonase
sonásemos
sonaseis
sonasen
sonasen

* Where the changes occur, the letters are printed in italics.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>sonaré sonarás sonará sonará sonaré sonaréis sonarán VV. sonarán</p> <p>V.</p> <p>sonare sonares sonare sonáremos sonareis sonarán</p> <p>si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.</p> <p>Future</p> <p>I shall sound thou wilt sound he will sound your honor will sound we shall sound ye will sound they will sound your honors will sound</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>sonaría sonarías sonaría sonaría sonaría sonaríamos sonaría sonarían VV. sonarían</p> <p>V.</p> <p>sonase sonases sonase sonásemos sonaseis sonarían</p> <p>si</p> <p>Conditional (Antecedent)</p> <p>I should sound thou shouldst sound he should sound your honor should sound we should sound ye should sound they should sound your honors should sound</p>	<p>or</p> <p>sonase sonases sonase sonásemos sonaseis sonarían</p> <p>if</p> <p>or</p> <p>sonase sonases sonase sonásemos sonaseis sonarían</p> <p>or VV. sonarían</p> <p>or sounded, etc.</p>
---	---	--

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p><i>szerna</i> sonad</p> <p><i>szerne</i> sonad</p> <p><i>szerte</i> V. sonad</p> <p><i>szernen</i> VV. sonad</p>	<p>let me sound let him sound sound, your honor let us sound let them sound sound, your honors</p>	<p>sound (thou) sound (ye)</p>
<p>no szernes no sonéis</p> <p>no szerne no szerte V. no sonemos no szernen VV.</p>	<p>let me not sound let him not sound sound not, your honor let us not sound let them not sound sound not, your honors</p>	<p>sound (thou) not sound (ye) not</p>

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sonado**, to have sounded.

INDICATIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. Comp. Imp. Comp. Past. Def. Comp. Fut. Comp. Cond.</p>	<p>he sonado, etc. habia sonado, etc. hubie sonado, etc. hubiere sonado, etc. habría sonado, etc.</p>	<p>I have sounded, etc. I had sounded, etc. (when) I had sounded, etc. I shall have sounded, etc. I should have sounded, etc.</p>
---	--	---

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. Comp. Imp. Comp. Fut. Comp. Cond.</p>	<p>haya sonado, etc. hubiera sonado, etc. hubiese sonado, etc. hubiere sonado, etc. hubiera or hubiese sonado, etc.</p>	<p>that I have or may have sounded, etc. that I should have or had sounded, etc. that I had or should have sounded, etc. that I have or shall have sounded, etc. that I should have or had sounded, etc.</p>
--	---	--

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, *u = ue*, when tonic *

166. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB JUGAR = TO PLAY, GAMBLE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: *jugar*, to play. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: *jugando*, playing. PAST PARTICIPLE: *jugado*, played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

	<i>Present</i>	
	<i>I play (do play, am playing)</i>	
<i>jugó</i>	thou playest	<i>jugues</i>
<i>jugas</i>	he plays	<i>jugue</i>
<i>jugamos</i>	your honor plays	<i>jugue</i>
<i>jugáis</i>	we play	<i>jugamos</i>
<i>jugan</i>	they play	<i>jugáis</i>
<i>jugaban</i>	your honors play	<i>jugan</i>
		} or may play, etc.

	<i>Imperfect</i>	
	<i>I was playing</i>	
<i>jugaba</i>	thou wast playing	<i>jugara</i>
<i>jugabas</i>	he was playing	<i>jugaras</i>
<i>jugaba</i>	your honor was playing	<i>jugara</i>
<i>jugabamos</i>	we were playing	<i>jugaramos</i>
<i>jugabais</i>	they were playing	<i>jugabais</i>
<i>jugaban</i>	your honors were playing	<i>jugaban</i>
		} or played.

Past Definite

	<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>	
	<i>I should play</i>	
<i>jugé</i>	thou shouldst play	<i>jugara</i>
<i>jugaste</i>	he should play	<i>jugaras</i>
<i>jugó</i>	your honor should play	<i>jugara</i>
<i>jugamos</i>	that we should play	<i>jugaramos</i>
<i>jugasteis</i>	that ye should play	<i>jugabais</i>
<i>jugaron</i>	that they should play	<i>jugaban</i>
		} or should play, etc.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>	
	<i>that I played</i>	
<i>jugase</i>	that thou played	<i>jugase</i>
<i>jugases</i>	that he played	<i>jugase</i>
<i>jugó</i>	that your honor played	<i>jugase</i>
<i>jugamos</i>	that ye played	<i>jugásemos</i>
<i>jugasteis</i>	that they played	<i>jugásemos</i>
<i>jugaron</i>	that your honors played	<i>jugásemos</i>
		} or should play, etc.

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics. Although the stem vowel is *u*, this verb belongs to the first class, its stem being originally *o* (Latin *ŷuari*).

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>jugaré jugarás jugará jugaremos jugaréis jugarán</p> <p>V.</p> <p>jugare ugares ugare ugáremos ugareis jugaren</p> <p>VV.</p>	<p>I shall play thou wilt play he will play your honor will play we shall play ye will play your honors will play</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I play thou play he play your honor play we play ye play they play your honors play</p> <p>if, when, while, although, etc.</p>	<p>or shall play, etc.</p>
<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>jugaría jugarías jugaría jugariamos jugariais jugarian</p> <p>V.</p> <p>jugara jugaras jugara jugáramos jugaraís jugaran</p> <p>VV.</p>	<p>I should play thou wouldst play he would play your honor would play we should play ye would play your honors would play</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>I should play thou shouldst play he should play your honor should play we should play ye should play they should play your honors should play</p>	<p>or played.</p>

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

¡jega	play (thou)
¡juga	play (ye)
¡juegue	let me play
¡juegue	let him play
¡juegue V.	play, your honor
¡juguemos	let us play
¡jueguen	let them play
¡juegen VV.	play, your honors

no ¡juegues	play (thou) not
no ¡juguéis	play (ye) not
no ¡juegue	let me not play
no ¡juegue V.	let him not play
no ¡juguemos	let us not play
no ¡jueguen	let them not play
no ¡jueguen VV.	play not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber jugado**, to have played.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo jugado**, having played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	he jugado , etc.	I have played, etc.
Comp. Imp.	habia jugado , etc.	I had played, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	hubie jugado , etc.	(when) I had played, etc.
Comp. Fut.	habré jugado , etc.	I shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond.	habría jugado , etc.	I should have played, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya jugado , etc.	that I have <i>or</i> may have played, etc.
Comp. Imp.	hubiera jugado , etc.	that I should have played, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiese jugado , etc.	that I had <i>or</i> should have played, etc.
Comp. Fut.	hubiera or hubiese jugado , etc.	that I have <i>or</i> shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond.	hubiera or hubiese jugado , etc.	that I should have <i>or</i> had played, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, e=ie, when tonic *

167. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **PERDER** = TO LOSE
SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **perder**, to lose.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

piérdo I lose (do lose, am losing)
piérrdes thou lovest
piérrde he loses
V. **piérrde** your honor loses
perdimos we lose
piérréis ye lose
piérrén they lose
VV. **piérrén** your honors lose

Imperfect

perdía I was losing
perdíás thou wast losing
perdía he was losing
V. **perdía** your honor was losing
perdíamos we were losing
perdíais ye were losing
perdíán they were losing
VV. **perdíán** your honors were losing

Past Definite

perdí I lost
perdiste thou lost
perdió he lost
V. **perdió** your honor lost
perdimos we lost
perdisteis ye lost
perdieron they lost
VV. **perdieron** your honors lost

Future

perderé I shall lose
perderás thou wilt lose
perderá he will lose
V. **perderá** your honor will lose
perderemos we shall lose
perderéis ye will lose
perderán they will lose
VV. **perderán** your honors will lose

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **perdiendo**, losing.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

piérda that I lose
piérrdas that thou lose
piérrda that he lose
V. **piérrda** that your honor lose
perdamos that we lose
piérrais that ye lose
piérrdan that they lose
VV. **piérrdan** that your honors lose

Imperfect (First Form)

perdiera that I should lose
perdieras that thou shouldst lose
perdiera that he should lose
V. **perdiera** that your honor should lose
perdiéramos that we should lose
perdiérais that ye should lose
perdiéran that they should lose
VV. **perdiéran** that your honors should lose

Imperfect (Second Form)

perdiese that I lost
perdieses that thou lost
perdiese that he lost
V. **perdiese** that your honor lost
perdiésemos that we lost
perdiéseis that ye lost
perdiesen that they lost
VV. **perdiesen** that your honors lost

Future

perdiere I lose
perdieres thou lose
perdiere he lose
V. **perdiere** your honor lose
perdiéremos we lose
perdiéreis ye lose
perdieren they lose
VV. **perdieren** your honors lose

PERDER

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

perderia
perderias
perderia
perderia
perderiamos
perderian
perderian

I should lose
 thou wouldst lose
 he would lose
 your honor would lose
 we should lose
 ye would lose
 they would lose
 your honors would lose

Conditional (Antecedent)

perdiera
perdieras
perdiera
perdiera
perdiéramos
perdiérais
perdiéran
perdiéran

or
 or
 or
 or
 or
 or
 or

perdiere
perdiere
perdiere
perdiere
perdiésemos
perdiésetis
perdiésetis
perdiésetis

if
 I should lose
 thou shouldst lose
 he should lose
 your honor should lose
 we should lose
 ye should lose
 they should lose
 your honors should lose

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

piérde
perded
piérda
piérda
piérda
perdamos
piérdan
piérdan

lose (thou)
 lose (ye)

let me lose
 let him lose
 lose, your honor
 let us lose
 let them lose
 lose, your honors

no piérdas
no piérdás
no piérda
no piérda
no piérda
no perdamos
no piérdan
no piérdan

lose (thou) not
 lose (ye) not
 let me not lose
 let him not lose
 lose not, your honor
 let us not lose
 let them not lose
 lose not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber perdido**, to have lost.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo perdido**, having lost.

INDICATIVE MOOD

he perdido, etc.
habia perdido, etc.
habe perdido, etc.
habré perdido, etc.

I have lost, etc.
 I had lost, etc.
 (when) I had lost, etc.
 I shall have lost, etc.

that I have or may have lost, etc.
 that I should have or had lost, etc.
 that I had or should have lost, etc.
 that I have or shall have lost, etc.
 that I should have or had lost, etc.

ascender
atender
cerner
condescender
contender

defender
descender
descenderse
discerner

distender
encender
extender
heder
hender

reverdecer
reverter
sobretender
sobreveterse
subtender

subtender
tender
transcender
traververter
verter

* **pretender** is regular.

Conjugate in the same manner:

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya perdido, etc.
hubiera perdido, etc.
hubiese perdido, etc.
hubiera perdido, etc.
hubiese perdido, etc.
hubiera or **hubiese per-**
dido, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS—First Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, *o = ue*, when tonic *

168. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB MOVER = TO MOVE SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: mover, to move.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: moviendo, moving.

PAST PARTICIPLE: movido, moved.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

muevo	I move (do move, am moving)
mueves	thou movest
mueve	he moves
V. mueve	your honor moves
movemos	we move
movéis	ye move
mueven	they move
VV. mueven	your honors move

Imperfect

movía	I was moving
movías	thou wast moving
movía	he was moving
V. movía	your honor was moving
movíamos	we were moving
movíais	ye were moving
movían	they were moving
VV. movían	your honors were moving

Fast Definite

moví	I moved
moviste	thou didst move
movió	he moved
V. movió	your honor moved
movimos	we moved
movistéis	ye moved
movieron	they moved
VV. movieron	your honors moved

Future

movéré	I shall move
movérás	thou wilt move
movérá	he will move
V. movérá	your honor will move
movéremos	we shall move
movéreis	ye will move
movérán	they will move
VV. movérán	your honors will move

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

mueva	that I move
muevas	that thou move
mueva	that he move
V. mueva	that your honor move
movamos	that we move
mováis	that ye move
muevan	that they move
VV. muevan	that your honors move

Imperfect (First Form)

moviera	that I should move
movieras	that thou shouldst move
moviera	that he should move
V. moviera	that your honor should move
moviéramos	that we should move
movierais	that ye should move
movieran	that they should move
VV. movieran	that your honors should move

Imperfect (Second Form)

moviese	that I moved
movieses	that thou moved
moviese	that he moved
V. moviese	that your honor moved
moviésemos	that we moved
movieséis	that ye moved
moviesen	that they moved
VV. moviesen	that your honors moved

Future

moviere	I move
movieres	thou move
moviere	he move
V. moviere	your honor move
moviéremos	we move
movieréis	ye move
movieren	they move
VV. movieren	your honors move

si, cuando, mien-
tras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while,
although, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

moveria I should move
moverias thou wouldst move
moveria he would move
moverias your honor would move
moveriamos we should move
moveriais ye would move
moverian they would move
moverian your honors would move

Conditional (Antecedent)

si **moveria** or **moviese** I should move
moverias or **movieses** thou shouldst move
moveria or **moviese** he should move
moverias or **movieses** your honor should move
moveriamos or **moviesemos** we should move
moveriais or **moviesieses** ye should move
moverian or **moviesesen** they should move
moverian or **moviesesen** your honors should move

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

mueve	move (thou)	no muevas	move (thou) not
moved	move (ye)	no mováis	move (ye) not
mueva	let me move	no mueva	let me not move
mueva	let him move	no mueva	let him not move
mueva V.	move, your honor	no mueva V.	move not, your honor
movamos	let us move	no movamos	let us not move
muevan	let them move	no muevan	let them not move
muevan VV.	move, your honors	no muevan VV.	move not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber movido**, to have moved. COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo movido**, having moved.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he movido**, etc. I have moved, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **habia movido**, etc. I had moved, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo movido**, etc. (when) I had moved, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré movido**, etc. I shall have moved, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habria movido**, etc. I should have moved, etc.

Comp. Pres. **haya movido**, etc. that I have or may have moved, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera movido**, etc. that I should have or had moved, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiese movido**, etc. that I had or should have moved, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiera or hubiese movido**, etc. that I have or shall have moved, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **movido**, etc. that I should have or had moved, etc.

absolver.
amover.
condolerse.
conmover.
contorse.
demoler.

desenvolver.
destorcer.
desvolver.
disolver.
doler.

envolver.
llover (impersonal)
moler.
promover.
redoler.

remoler.
remover.
resolver.
retorcer.
revolver.

solver.
somover.
torcer.
volver.

Conjugate in the same manner:

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, *o = ue = hue*, when tonic *

169. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB OLER = TO SMELL

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **oler**, to smell. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **olens**, smelling. PAST PARTICIPLE: **olido**, smelled.
 INDICATIVE MOOD SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<i>Present</i>	<i>Present</i>
I smell (do smell, am smelling)	that I smell
thou smell'st	that thou smell
he smells	that he smell
your honor smells	that your honor smell
we smell	that we smell
ye smell	that ye smell
they smell	that they smell
your honors smell	that your honors smell
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>
I was smelling	that I should smell
thou wast smelling	that thou shouldst smell
he was smelling	that he should smell
your honor was smelling	that your honor should smell
we were smelling	that we should smell
ye were smelling	that ye should smell
they were smelling	that they should smell
your honors were smelling	that your honors should smell

<i>Present</i>	<i>Present</i>
<i>olito</i>	<i>olito</i>
<i>olitas</i>	<i>olitas</i>
<i>olita</i>	<i>olita</i>
<i>olitas</i>	<i>olitas</i>
<i>olitos</i>	<i>olitos</i>
<i>olitis</i>	<i>olitis</i>
<i>olitan</i>	<i>olitan</i>
<i>olitan</i>	<i>olitan</i>
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>
<i>olito</i>	<i>olito</i>
<i>olitas</i>	<i>olitas</i>
<i>olito</i>	<i>olito</i>
<i>olitas</i>	<i>olitas</i>
<i>olitos</i>	<i>olitos</i>
<i>olitis</i>	<i>olitis</i>
<i>olitan</i>	<i>olitan</i>
<i>olitan</i>	<i>olitan</i>

<i>Past Definite</i>	<i>Past Definite</i>
I smelled	that I smelled
thou didst smell	that thou smelled
he smelled	that he smelled
your honor smelled	that your honor smelled
we smelled	that we smelled
ye smelled	that ye smelled
they smelled	that they smelled
your honors smelled	that your honors smelled

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I shall smell thou wilt smell he will smell your honor will smell we shall smell ye will smell they will smell your honors will smell</p> <p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>I should smell thou wouldst smell he would smell your honor would smell we should smell ye would smell they would smell your honors would smell</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>(I smell thou smell he smell your honor smell we smell ye smell they smell your honors smell</p> <p>or shall smell, etc.</p>
<p>oleré olerás olerá olerá oleremos oleréis olerán</p> <p>V.</p> <p>oleramos oleréis</p> <p>VV. olerán</p>	<p>olere oleres olere olere olieremos olieréis olieren olieren</p> <p>V.</p> <p>olieramos olieréis</p> <p>VV. olieren</p>

<p>oliera olieras oliera olieras olieramos olieran</p> <p>V.</p> <p>olieramos olieran</p> <p>VV. olieran</p>	<p>or or or or or or or</p> <p>oliese oliese oliese oliesemos olieséis oliesen oliesen</p> <p>V.</p> <p>oliesemos olieséis</p> <p>VV. oliesen</p>
---	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p>huele oled</p> <p>huela huela huela V. olamos huelan huelan VV.</p>	<p>smell (thou) smell (ye)</p> <p>let me smell let him smell smell, your honor let us smell let them smell smell, your honors</p>
--	---

<p>no hueles no oláis</p> <p>no huela no huela no olamos no huelan no huelan VV.</p>	<p>smell (thou) not smell (ye) not</p> <p>let me not smell let him not smell smell not, your honor let us not smell let them not smell smell not, your honors</p>
---	---

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber oído**, to have smel'ed. COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo oído**, having smelled.

INDICATIVE MOOD

<p>he oído, etc. había oído, etc. hube oído, etc. habré oído, etc. habría oído, etc.</p>	<p>I have smelled, etc. I had smelled, etc. (when) I had smelled, etc. I shall have smelled, etc. I should have smelled, etc.</p>
---	---

<p>haya oído, etc. hubiera oído, etc. hubiese oído, etc. hubiera oído, etc. hubiese oído, etc.</p>	<p>that I have <i>or</i> may have smelled, etc. that I should have <i>or</i> had smelled, etc. that I had <i>or</i> should have smelled, etc. that I have <i>or</i> shall have smelled, etc. that I should have <i>or</i> had smelled, etc.</p>
---	---

In like manner **desosar**, to bone (**hueso**), and **desovar**, to spawn (**huevo**) introduce an **h** before diphthong **ue**; but **desosar**, meaning 'not to dare,' is regular.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **o** = **ue**, when tonic *

170. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **COCER** = TO BOIL, BAKE (MEAT, VEGETABLES, BREAD)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **cocer**, to boil. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **cociendo**, boiling. PAST PARTICIPLE: **cocido**, boiled.
 INDICATIVE MOOD SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<p><i>Present</i></p> <p>cozo (do boil, am boiling) thou wast boiling he boils your honor boils we boil ye boil they boil your honors boil</p> <p>V. coco coces cocemos cocéis cocieren</p> <p>VV. coco cocieran</p>	<p>cocza coczas cocza cocza cozamos cozais coczan coczan</p> <p>V. cocza cozamos</p> <p>VV. coczan</p>	<p><i>Present</i></p> <p>that I boil that thou boil that he boil that your honor boil that we boil that ye boil that they boil that your honors boil</p> <p style="text-align: right;">} or may boil, etc.</p>
--	---	---

<p><i>Imperfect</i></p> <p>I was boiling thou wast boiling he was boiling your honor was boiling we were boiling they were boiling your honors were boiling</p> <p>V. cocia cocias cocia cocia cociamos cociáis cocian cocian</p> <p>V. cocia cocias cociamos</p> <p>VV. cocia cocieran</p>	<p>cociera cocieras cociera cociera cociáramos cociarais cocieran cocieran</p> <p>V. cociera cociáramos</p> <p>VV. cocieran</p>	<p><i>Imperfect (First Form)</i></p> <p>that I should boil that thou shouldst boil that he should boil that your honor should boil that we should boil that ye should boil that they should boil that your honors should boil</p> <p style="text-align: right;">} or boiled.</p>
--	--	---

<p><i>Past Definite</i></p> <p>I boiled thou didst boil he boiled your honor boiled we boiled they boiled your honors boiled</p> <p>V. coci cociste coció coció cocimos cocistéis cocieron cocieron</p> <p>V. coció cocimos cocistéis</p> <p>VV. coció cocieron</p>	<p>cociése cociéses cociése cociése cociésemos cociéiséis cociésen cociésen</p> <p>V. cociése cociésemos</p> <p>VV. cociésen</p>	<p><i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i></p> <p>that I boiled that thou boiled that he boiled that your honor boiled that we boiled that ye boiled that they boiled that your honors boiled</p> <p style="text-align: right;">} or should boil, etc.</p>
--	---	--

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics. Speaking of water, **hervir**, to boil, is the correct verb to use.

Future

coceré I shall boil
cocerás thou wilt boil
cocerá he will boil
cocerá your honor will boil
coceremos we shall boil
coceréis ye will boil
cocerán they will boil
VV. cocerán your honors will boil

Conditional (Consequent)

cocería I should boil
cocerías thou wouldst boil
cocería he would boil
V. cocería your honor would boil
coceríamos we should boil
coceréis ye would boil
cocerían they would boil
VV. cocerían your honors would boil

Future

cociere I boil
cocieres thou boil
cociere he boil
V. cociere your honor boil
cociéramos we boil
cocieréis ye boil
cocieran they boil
VV. cocieran your honors boil

Conditional (Antecedent)

cociere or **cociese** I should boil
cocieras or **cocieses** thou shouldst boil
cociere or **cociese** he should boil
V. cociere or **V. cociese** your honor should boil
cociéramos or **cociésemos** if we should boil
cocieráis or **cocieréis** ye should boil
cocieran or **cociesen** they should boil
VV. cocieran or **VV. cociesen** your honors should boil

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

or shall boil, etc.

or boiled.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

	boil (thou)	boil (thou) not
cocce	boil (ye)	boil (ye) not
coced		
cueza	let me boil	let me not boil
cueza	let him boil	let him not boil
cueza V.	boil, your honor	boil not, your honor
cozamos	let us boil	let us not boil
cuezan	let them boil	let them not boil
cuezan VV.	boil, your honors	boil not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber cocido**, to have boiled.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he cocido**, etc. I have boiled, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **haya cocido**, etc. I had boiled, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubo cocido**, etc. (when) I had boiled, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habrá cocido**, etc. I shall have boiled, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habría cocido**, etc. I should have boiled, etc.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo cocido**, having boiled.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya cocido**, etc. that I have or may have boiled, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera cocido**, etc. that I should have or had boiled, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (ad form) **hubiese cocido**, etc. that I had or shall have boiled, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere cocido**, etc. that I have or shall have boiled, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese cocido**, etc. that I should have or had boiled, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

escocer, recocer.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, e = ie, when tonic *

171. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB DISCERNIR = TO DISCERN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **discernir**, to discern. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **discerniēdo**, discerning. PAST PARTICIPLE: **discernido**, discerned.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

discernio I discern (do discern, am discerning)
discernis thou discernest
discerne he discerns
 V. **discerne** your honor discerns
discernimus we discern
discernitis ye discern
 VV. **discernent** they discern
discernent your honors discern

Imperfect

discernia I was discerning
discernias thou wast discerning
discernia he was discerning
 V. **discernias** your honor was discerning
discerniamus we were discerning
discernistis ye were discerning
 VV. **discerniant** they were discerning
discerniant your honors were discerning

Past Definite

discerni I discerned
discernisti thou didst discern
discernit he discerned
 V. **discernit** your honor discerned
discernimus we discerned
discernistis ye discerned
 VV. **discernieron** they discerned
discernieron your honors discerned

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

discernā that I discern
discernās that thou discern
discernat that he discern
 V. **discernāt** that your honor discern
discernāmus that we discern
discernātis that ye discern
 VV. **discernant** that they discern
discernant that your honors discern

Imperfect (First Form)

discernierā that I should discern
discernierās that thou shouldst discern
discernierat that he should discern
 V. **discernierāt** that your honor should discern
discernierāmus that we should discern
discernierātis that ye should discern
 VV. **discernierant** that they should discern
discernierant that your honors should discern

Imperfect (Second Form)

discernēse that I discerned
discernēsēs that thou discerned
discernēsēt that he discerned
 V. **discernēsēt** that your honor discerned
discernēsēmus that we discerned
discernēsētis that ye discerned
 VV. **discernēsēnt** that they discerned
discernēsēnt that your honors discerned

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I shall discern thou wilt discern he will discern your honor will discern we shall discern ye will discern they will discern your honors will discern</p> <p>V. discernirás discernirá discerniremos discernireis discernirán</p> <p>VV. discernirán</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I discern thou shalt discern he shall discern your honor shall discern we discern ye discern they discern your honors discern</p> <p>V. discerniere discerniere discernieremos discerniereis discernirán</p> <p>VV. discernieren</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>I should discern thou wouldst discern he would discern your honor would discern we should discern ye would discern they would discern your honors would discern</p> <p>V. discernieras discernieras discernierais discernierais discernirían</p> <p>VV. discernirían</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>I should discern thou shouldst discern he should discern your honor should discern we should discern ye should discern they should discern your honors should discern</p> <p>V. discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses</p> <p>VV. discerniesen</p>	<p>si, cuando, men- tras, aunque, etc.</p> <p>discerniera discernieras discerniera discernieras discernierais discernierais discernieran</p> <p>V. discerniera discernieras discernierais discernieran</p> <p>VV. discernieran</p>	<p>although, while, it, when, etc.</p> <p>I discern thou discern he discern your honor discern we discern ye discern they discern your honors discern</p> <p>V. discerniere discerniere discernieremos discerniereis discernirán</p> <p>VV. discernieren</p>	<p>or discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses</p> <p>V. discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses</p> <p>VV. discerniesen</p>	<p>or shall discern, etc.</p> <p>discerniere discerniere discernieremos discerniereis discernirán</p> <p>V. discerniere discerniere discernieremos discerniereis discernirán</p> <p>VV. discernieren</p>	<p>or discerned, etc.</p> <p>I should discern thou shouldst discern he should discern your honor should discern we should discern ye should discern they should discern your honors should discern</p> <p>V. discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses discernieses</p> <p>VV. discerniesen</p>
--	--	--	--	--	--	---	--	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p>discern (thou) discern (ye)</p> <p>discernirne discernid</p> <p>discernirna discernidna discernirna V. discernirna discernirna VV.</p>	<p>discern (thou) not discern (ye) not</p> <p>no discernas no discernáis</p> <p>no discerna no discerna no discerna V. no discernamos no discernan VV.</p>	<p>let me discern let him, her discern discern, your honor let us discern let them discern discern, your honors</p>	<p>let me not discern let him, her not discern discern not, your honor let us not discern let them not discern discern not, your honors</p>
---	--	---	---

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber discernido**, to have discerned. **habiendo discernido**, having discerned.

INDICATIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. Comp. Imp. Comp. Past Def. Comp. Fut Comp. Cond.</p> <p>he discernido, etc. habia discernido, etc. hubo discernido, etc. habría discernido, etc.</p>	<p>Comp. Pres. Comp. Imp. (1st form) Comp. Imp. (2d form) Comp. Fut. Comp. Cond.</p> <p>haya discernido, etc. hubiera discernido, etc. hubiese discernido, etc. hubiere discernido, etc. hubiera or hubiese discernido, etc.</p>	<p>that I have discerned, etc. that I had discerned, etc. that I should have discerned, etc. that I had or should have discerned, etc. that I have or shall have discerned, etc. that I should have or had discerned, etc.</p>
---	--	--

This verb and the defective verb **concernir** belong to the first class; originally they were **discerner**, **concerner**, and they retain the irregularities of their primitive verb, **cerner**.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, **e = ie** when tonic. Past and present definite stems, **e = i** when atonic and when followed by **a, ie, ió ***

172. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SENTIR = TO FEEL

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **sentir**, to feel.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **sintiéndolo**, feeling.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

siento I feel (do feel, am feeling)
sientes thou feelest
siente he feels
siente your honor feels
sentimos we feel
sentís ye feel
sienten they feel
sienten your honors feel

Imperfect

sentía I was feeling
sentías thou wast feeling
sentía he was feeling
sentía your honor was feeling
sentíamos we were feeling
sentíais ye were feeling
sentían they were feeling
sentían your honors were feeling

Past Definite

sentí I felt
sentiste thou didst feel
sintió he felt
sintió your honor felt
sentimos we felt
sentisteis ye felt
sintieron they felt
sintieron your honors felt

Future

sentiré I shall feel
sentirás thou wilt feel
sentirá he will feel
sentirá your honor will feel
sentiremos we shall feel
sentiréis ye will feel
sentirán they will feel
sentirán your honors will feel

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

sienta that I feel
sientas that thou feel
sientas that he feel
sienta that your honor feel
sintamos that we feel
sintáis that ye feel
sintan that they feel
sintan that your honors feel

Imperfect (First Form)

sintiera that I should feel
sintieras that thou shouldst feel
sintiera that he should feel
sintiera that your honor should feel
sintieramos that we should feel
sintierais that ye should feel
sintieran that they should feel
sintieran that your honors should feel

Imperfect (Second Form)

sintiese that I felt
sintieses that thou felt
sintiese that he felt
sintiese that your honor felt
sintiesemos that we felt
sintieseis that ye felt
sintiesen that they felt
sintiesen that your honors felt

Future

sintiere I feel
sintieres thou feel
sintiere he feel
sintiere your honors feel
sintieremos we feel
sintieréis ye feel
sintieren they feel
sintieren your honors feel

*si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.*

sintiere I feel
sintieres thou feel
sintiere he feel
sintiere your honors feel
sintieremos we feel
sintieréis ye feel
sintieren they feel
sintieren your honors feel

*if, when, while,
 although, etc.*

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

sentiria	I should feel
sentirias	thou wouldst feel
sentiria	he would feel
sentiriamos	your honor would feel
sentiriamos	we should feel
sentirian	ye should feel
sentirian	they should feel
VV. sentirian	your honors would feel

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	s/ntiera s/ntieras s/ntiera s/ntiera s/ntierais s/ntieran VV. s/ntieran	or	s/ntiese s/ntieses s/ntiese s/ntiese s/ntiesemos s/ntieseis s/ntiesen or VV. s/ntiesen	I should feel thou shouldst feel he should feel your honor should feel we should feel ye should feel they should feel your honors should feel
		or	s/ntieses s/ntieses s/ntieses s/ntieses s/ntieses s/ntieses s/ntieses or VV. s/ntieses	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

s/ntie	feel (thou)
s/ntie	feel (ye) not
s/ntia	let me feel
s/ntia	let him feel
s/ntia V.	feel, your honor
s/ntiamos	let us feel
s/ntian	let them feel
s/ntian VV.	feel, your honors
no s/ntias	feel (thou) not
no s/ntais	feel (ye) not
no s/ntia	let me not feel
no s/ntia V.	let him not feel
no s/ntiamos	let us not feel
no s/ntian	let them not feel
no s/ntian VV.	let not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sentido**, to have felt.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	he sentido , etc.	I have felt, etc.
Comp. Imp.	habia sentido , etc.	I had felt, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	hubo sentido , etc.	(when) I had felt, etc.
Comp. Fut.	habré sentido , etc.	I shall have felt, etc.
Comp. Cond.	habria sentido , etc.	I should have felt, etc.

adherir.	deferir.
advertir.	desadvertir.
arrepentirse.	desconsentir.
asentir.	diferir.
consentir.	digerir.
controversir.	disentir.
convertir.	divertir.

Conjugate in the same manner:

entregir.	pervertir.
herir.	preferir.
hervir.	presentir.
ingerir.	preferir.
invertir.	referir.
matherir.	reherir.
mentir.	rehervir.
	rementir.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sentido**, having felt.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya sentido , etc.	that I have or may have felt, etc.
Comp. Imp.	hubiera sentido , etc.	that I should have or had felt, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	hubiese sentido , etc.	that I had or should have felt, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	hubiere sentido , etc.	that I have or shall have felt, etc.
Comp. Fut.	hubiera or hubiese sentido , etc.	that I should have or had felt, etc.
Comp. Cond.		

requerir.
resentirse.
sobrevestir.
subvertir.
sugerir.
traserir.
zaherir.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, e = ie = ye when tonic. Present and past def. stems, e = i when atonic and followed by a, ie, ió *

173. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ERGUIR = TO THROW BACK HAUGHTILY (THE HEAD)

INFINITIVE. *erguir*, to throw back haughtily. PRES. PARTICIPLE: *erguendo*, throwing back haughtily. PAST PART.: *erguido*, thrown back haughtily.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I throw back haughtily (to throw back, am throw-
ing back)
thou throwest back haughtily
he throws back haughtily
your honor throws back haughtily
we throw back haughtily
ye throw back haughtily
they throw back haughtily
your honors throw back haughtily

ergo
ergas
erga
erga
ergamos
ergais
ergan
ergan

Imperfect

I was throwing back haughtily
thou wast throwing back haughtily
he was throwing back haughtily
your honor was throwing back haughtily
we were throwing back haughtily
ye were throwing back haughtily
they were throwing back haughtily
your honors were throwing back haughtily

erguiera
erguieras
erguiera
erguiera
erguieramos
erguierais
erguieran
erguieran

Past Definite

I threw back haughtily
thou throwest back haughtily
he threw back haughtily
your honor threw back haughtily
we threw back haughtily
ye threw back haughtily
they threw back haughtily
your honors threw back haughtily

erguiese
erguieses
erguiese
erguiese
erguiesemos
erguiesais
erguiesen
erguiesen

Future

I shall throw back haughtily
thou wilt throw back haughtily
he will throw back haughtily
your honor will throw back haughtily
we shall throw back haughtily
ye will throw back haughtily
they will throw back haughtily
your honors will throw back haughtily

erguiré
erguirás
erguirá
erguirá
erguiremos
erguiréis
erguirán
erguirán

that I throw back haughtily
that thou throw back haughtily
that he throw back haughtily
that your honor throw back haughtily
that we throw back haughtily
that ye throw back haughtily
that they throw back haughtily
that your honors throw back haughtily

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should throw back haughtily
that thou shouldst throw back haughtily
that he should throw back haughtily
that your honor should throw back haughtily
that we should throw back haughtily
that ye should throw back haughtily
that they should throw back haughtily
that your honors should throw back haughtily

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I threw back haughtily
that thou threw back haughtily
that he threw back haughtily
that your honor threw back haughtily
that we threw back haughtily
that ye threw back haughtily
that they threw back haughtily
that your honors threw back haughtily

Future

I throw back haughtily
thou throw back haughtily
he throw back haughtily
your honor throw back haughtily
we throw back haughtily
ye throw back haughtily
they throw back haughtily
your honors throw back haughtily

or used to throw
back haughtily.

or should throw
back haughtily,
etc.

or shall throw
back haughtily,
etc.

if, though, etc.

if, when, while,

V.

VV.

si, cuando, when,

etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

erguiria I should throw back haughtily
erguiria thou wouldst throw back haughtily
erguiria he would throw back haughtily
 V. **erguiria** your honor would throw back haughtily
erguiriamos we should throw back haughtily
erguirian they would throw back haughtily
erguirian your honors would throw back haughtily
 VV. **erguirian**

yerque throw (thou) back haughtily
erguid throw (ye) back haughtily

yerga let me throw back haughtily
yerga let him throw back haughtily
yerga V. throw back haughtily, your honor
irgamos let us throw back haughtily
yergan let them throw back haughtily
yergan VV. throw back haughtily, your honors

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber erguido**, to have thrown back haughtily.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo erguido**, having thrown back haughtily.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he erguido**, etc. I have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia erguido**, etc. I had thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hube erguido**, etc. (when) I had thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré erguido**, etc. I shall have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria erguido**, etc. I should have thrown back haughtily, etc.

In the verb **erguir**, in the first, second and third persons singular and third persons singular and third persons plural of present indicative, subjunctive and imperative, the vowel **i** may take the place of the diphthong **ie**, written **ye**: thus,

irgo, **irgues**, **irgue**, V. **irgue**, VV. **irguen**
irga, **irgas**, **irga**, V. **irga**, VV. **irgan**

erguir belongs either to the second or third class of irregular verbs: **yergo**, second class, **irgo**, third class.

Conditional (Antecedent)

irguera or **irguiese** I should throw back haughtily
irgueras or **irguieses** thou shouldst throw back haughtily
irguera or **irguiese** he should throw back haughtily
 V. **irguera** or **irguiese** your honor should throw back haughtily
irguéramos or **irguiésemos** if we should throw back haughtily
irguérais or **irguiérais** we should throw back haughtily
irguieran or **irguiesen** they should throw back haughtily
 VV. **irguieran** or **irguiesen** your honors should throw back haughtily

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

throw (thou) not back haughtily
 throw (ye) not back haughtily

no yergas let me not throw back haughtily
no yerga let him not throw back haughtily
no yerga V. let us not throw back haughtily
no irgamos let us not throw back haughtily
no yergan let them not throw back haughtily
no yergan VV. throw not back haughtily, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber erguido**, to have thrown back haughtily.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo erguido**, having thrown back haughtily.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya erguido**, etc. that I have or may have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera erguido**, etc. that I should have or had thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese erguido**, etc. that I had or should have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere erguido**, etc. that I have or shall have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese erguido**, etc. that I should have or had thrown back haughtily, etc.

irgue no *irgas*

irga no **irga**
irga V. no **irga** V.
irgan V. no **irgan** VV.
irgan VV. no **irgan** VV.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, *i* = *ie* when tonic *

174. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ADQUIRIR** = TO ACQUIRE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **adquirir**, to acquire. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **adquiriendo**, acquiring. PAST PARTICIPLE: **adquirido**, acquired.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

adquirero I acquire (do acquire, am acquiring)
adquieres thou acquires
adquiere he acquires
adquirimos your honor acquires
adquieren ye acquire
adquieren they acquire
adquieren your honors acquire

Imperfect

adquiría I was acquiring
adquirías thou wast acquiring
adquiría he was acquiring
adquiríamos your honor was acquiring
adquirían ye were acquiring
adquirían they were acquiring
adquirían your honors were acquiring

Past Definite

adquirí I acquired
adquiriste thou acquiredst
adquirió he acquired
adquirimos your honor acquired
adquiristeis ye acquired
adquirieron they acquired
adquirieron your honors acquired

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

adquiera that I acquire
adquieras that thou acquire
adquiera that he acquire
adquiera that your honor acquire
adquiramos that we acquire
adquierais that they acquire
adquieran that your honors acquire

Imperfect (First Form)

adquiriera that I should acquire
adquirieras that thou shouldst acquire
adquiriera that he should acquire
adquiriera that your honor should acquire
adquiriéramos that we should acquire
adquirieran that they should acquire
adquirieran that your honors should acquire

Imperfect (Second Form)

adquiriese that I acquired
adquirieses that thou acquiredst
adquiriese that he acquired
adquiriese that your honor acquired
adquiriésemos that we acquired
adquirieseis that they acquired
adquiriesen that your honors acquired

*These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Future

adquiriré
adquirirás
adquirirá
adquirirá
adquirirá
adquirirémos
adquiriréis
adquirirán
VV. adquirirán

V. **adquirirémos**
adquiriréis

VV. **adquirirán**

I shall acquire
 thou wilt acquire
 he will acquire
 your honor will acquire
 we shall acquire
 ye will acquire
 they will acquire
 your honors will acquire

adquiriere
adquirieres
adquiriere
adquiriere
adquirieremos
adquirieréis
adquirieren
VV. adquirirén

V. **adquirieremos**
adquirieréis

VV. **adquirieren**

I acquire
 thou acquire
 he acquire
 your honor acquire
 we acquire
 ye acquire
 they acquire
 your honors acquire

or shall acquire,
 etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

adquiriría
adquirirías
adquiriría
adquiriría
adquiriríamos
adquiriríais
adquirirían
VV. adquirirían

V. **adquiriríamos**
adquiriríais

VV. **adquirirían**

I should acquire
 thou wouldst acquire
 he would acquire
 your honor would acquire
 we should acquire
 ye would acquire
 they would acquire
 your honors would acquire

adquiriera
adquirieras
adquiriera
adquiriera
adquiriéramos
adquiriérais
adquirieran
VV. adquirieran

or **adquiriese**
 or **adquiriese**
 or **adquiriese**
 or **adquiriésemos**
 or **adquiriérais**
 or **adquiriesen**
 or **VV. adquiriesen**

I should acquire
 thou shouldst acquire
 he should acquire
 your honor should acquire
 we should acquire
 ye should acquire
 they should acquire
 your honors should acquire

Future

adquiriere
adquirieres
adquiriere
adquiriere
adquirieremos
adquirieréis
adquirieren
VV. adquirirén

V. **adquirieremos**
adquirieréis

VV. **adquirieren**

I acquire
 thou acquire
 he acquire
 your honor acquire
 we acquire
 ye acquire
 they acquire
 your honors acquire

or shall acquire,
 etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

adquiriera
adquirieras
adquiriera
adquiriera
adquiriéramos
adquiriérais
adquirieran
VV. adquirieran

or **adquiriese**
 or **adquiriese**
 or **adquiriese**
 or **adquiriésemos**
 or **adquiriérais**
 or **adquiriesen**
 or **VV. adquiriesen**

I should acquire
 thou shouldst acquire
 he should acquire
 your honor should acquire
 we should acquire
 ye should acquire
 they should acquire
 your honors should acquire

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

adquiere
adquiere

adquiere
adquiere

adquiere
adquiere
adquiere
adquiere
adquiere
adquiere
adquiere

acquire (thou)
 acquire (ye)

let me acquire
 let him acquire
 acquire, your honor
 let us acquire
 let them acquire
 acquire, your honors

no adquieras
no adquieras

no adquieras
no adquieras
no adquieras
no adquieras
no adquieras
no adquieras
no adquieras

acquire (thou) not
 acquire (ye) not

let me not acquire
 let him not acquire
 acquire not, your honor
 let us not acquire
 let them not acquire
 acquire not, your honors

Adquirir and **inquirir**, being derived from a primitive **quer**, still have the diphthong **ie** in the present stem when tonic.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber adquirido**, to have acquired.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he adquirido**, etc. I have acquired, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **había adquirido**, etc. I had acquired, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubiera adquirido**, etc. (when) I had acquired, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere adquirido**, etc. I shall have acquired, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera adquirido**, etc. I should have acquired, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo adquirido**, having acquired.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya adquirido**, etc. that I have or may have acquired, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera adquirido**, etc. that I should have or had acquired, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese adquirido**, etc. that I had or should have acquired, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere adquirido**, etc. that I have or shall have acquired, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera o hubiese adquirido**, etc. that I should have or had acquired, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, **o** = **ue** when tonic. Present and past definite stems, **o** = **u** when atonic and followed by **a**, **ie**, **ió***

175. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB MORIR = TO DIE

SIMPLE TENSES.

INFINITIVE: morir , to die.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE: muriendo , dying.	PAST PARTICIPLE: muerto , died.
INDICATIVE MOOD		
<i>Present</i>		
muer o muer es muer e muer en	I die (do die, am dying) thou diest he dies your honor dies we die ye die they die your honors die	that I die that thou die that he die that your honor die that we die that ye die that they die that your honor die
V. muri mos muri en		or may die, etc.
VV. muer en		
<i>Imperfect</i>		
moria moria s moria moria mos moria is moria n	I was dying thou wast dying he was dying your honor was dying we were dying ye were dying they were dying your honors were dying	that I should die that thou shouldst die that he should die that your honor should die that we should die that ye should die that they should die that your honors should die
V. muri amos muri eramos		or died.
VV. muri eran		
<i>Past Definite</i>		
mori mori ste muri ó muri ó muri ó muri ó muri ó muri eron	I died thou didst die he died your honor died we died ye died they died your honors died	or should die, etc.
V. muri ó muri ó muri ó muri ó muri ó		
VV. muri eron		
SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD		
<i>Present</i>		
muer a muer as muer a muer amos muer áis muer an		
V. muri era muri eramos		
VV. muri eran		
<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>		
muri era muri erás muri era muri eramos muri eráis muri eran		
V. muri erá muri eramos		
VV. muri erán		
<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>		
muri ese muri eses muri ese muri esemos muri eséis muri esen	that I die that thou die that he die that your honor die that we die that ye die that they die that your honors die	
V. muri ese muri esemos		
VV. muri esen		

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

NOTE. — **Morir** has the irregular past participle, **muerto**.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I shall die thou wilt die he will die your honor will die we shall die they will die your honors will die</p> <p>V. moriré morirás morirá moriremos moriréis morirán</p> <p>VV. morirán</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>si V. muriera murieras muriera murieramos murierais murieran</p> <p>VV. murieran</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>I should die thou wouldst die he would die your honor would die we should die they would die your honors would die</p> <p>V. muriera murieras muriera murieramos murierais murieran</p> <p>VV. murieran</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>I should die thou shouldst die he should die your honor should die we should die they should die your honors should die</p> <p>V. muriese murieras muriese muriesemos muriesets muriesen</p> <p>VV. muriesen</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>muriere murieras muriere murieremos murieréis murieren</p> <p>V. muriere murieras muriere murieramos murierais murieran</p> <p>VV. murieran</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I die thou die he die your honor die we die they die your honors die</p> <p>si V. muriera murieras muriera murieramos murierais murieran</p> <p>VV. murieran</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>muriera murieras muriera murieramos murierais murieran</p> <p>V. muriera murieras muriera murieramos murierais murieran</p> <p>VV. murieran</p>	<p>or shall die, etc.</p> <p>or died.</p>
---	--	---	--	---	--	---	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p><i>Imperative Affirmative</i></p> <p>muere muere muera muera V. muerramos muerran</p> <p>VV. muerran</p>	<p><i>Imperative Negative</i></p> <p>no muieras no muerais no muera no muera V. no muerramos no muerran</p> <p>VV. muerran</p>	<p>die (thou) not die (ye) not</p> <p>let me not die let him not die die not, your honor let us not die let them not die die not, your honors</p>
---	--	---

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber muerto**, to have died.

INDICATIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. he muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Imp. habia muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Past Def. hubo muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Fut. habrá muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Cond. habria muerto, etc.</p>	<p>I have died, etc. (when) I had died, etc. I had died etc. I shall have died, etc. I should have died, etc.</p>
---	---

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. haya muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Imp. (1st form) hubiera muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Imp. (2d form) hubiese muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Fut. hubiere muerto, etc.</p> <p>Comp. Cond. hubiera or hubiese muerto, etc.</p>	<p>that I have or may have died, etc. that I should have or had died, etc. that I had or should have died, etc. that I have or shall have died, etc. that I should have or hubiese muerto, etc.</p>
--	---

Conjugate in the same manner:

<p>adormir</p> <p>entremorir</p>	<p>premorir</p>
--	------------------------

Podrir or **puđrir**, **puđriendo**, **puđrido**, to decay. }
Repodrir or **repudrir**, **repudriendo**, **repodrido**. } now **u** throughout, except as indicated.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Third Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, e = i when tonic, or when followed by a. Past Definite Stem, e = i when atonic and followed by ie, ió *

176. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SERVIR = TO SERVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **servir**, to serve.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

servo (do serve, am serving)
 thou servest
 he serves
 your honor serves
 we serve
 ye serve
 they serve
 your honors serve

Imperfect

servia I was serving
 thou wast serving
 he was serving
 your honor was serving
 we were serving
 ye were serving
 they were serving
 your honors were serving

Past Definite

servi I served
 thou didst serve
 he served
 your honor served
 we served
 ye served
 they served
 your honors served

Future

serviré I shall serve
 thou wilt serve
 he will serve
 your honor will serve
 we shall serve
 ye will serve
 they will serve
 your honors will serve

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **serviendo**, serving.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

serva that I serve
servas that thou serve
serva that he serve
serva that your honor serve
servamos that we serve
serváis that ye serve
servan that they serve
servan that your honors serve

Imperfect (First Form)

serviera that I should serve
servieras that thou shouldst serve
serviera that he should serve
serviera that your honor should serve
serviéramos that we should serve
servierais that ye should serve
servieran that they should serve
servieran that your honors should serve

Imperfect (Second Form)

serviese that I served
servieses that thou served
serviese that he served
serviese that your honor served
serviésemos that we served
servieseis that ye served
serviesen that they served
serviesen that your honors served

Future

serviere I shall serve
servieres thou serve
serviere he serve
serviere your honor serve
serviéremos we serve
servieréis ye serve
servieren they serve
servieren your honors serve

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italic.

Conditional (Consequent)

serviría I should serve
servirías thou wouldst serve
serviría he would serve
serviría your honor would serve
 V. **serviríamos** we should serve
serviríais ye should serve
servirían they would serve
 VV. **servirían** your honors would serve

Conditional (Antecedent)

si or V. VV.	{ serviera or serviese servieras or servieses serviera or serviese servieramos or serviésemos servierais or servieseis servieran or serviesen servieran or serviesen	if your honor should serve we should serve ye should serve they should serve your honors should serve	} or served.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sirve servid sirva sirva sirva V. servamos servan servan VV.	serve (thou) serve (ye) let me serve let him serve serve, your honor let us serve let them serve serve, your honors	no sirvas no sirváis no sirva no sirva V. no sirvamos no sirvan no sirvan VV.	serve (thou) not serve (ye) not let me not serve let him not serve serve not, your honor let us not serve let them not serve serve not, your honors
---	--	--	--

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber servido**, to have served.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo servido**, having served.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he servido**, etc. I have served, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia servido**, etc. I had served, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo servido**, etc. (when) I had served, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré servido**, etc. I shall have served, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria servido**, etc. I should have served, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya servido**, etc. that I have or may have served, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera servido**, etc. that I should have or had served, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese servido**, etc. that I had or should have served, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiere servido**, etc. that I have or shall have served, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiera or hubiese servido**, etc. that I should have or had served, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese servido**, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

ceñir.	derretir.	embestir.	reelegir.
colegir.	desceñir.	investir.	regir.
comedirse.	descomedirse.	medir.	rehenchir.
competir.	despedir.	pedir.	rehenchir.
concebir.	despedirse.	perseguir.	renir.
conseguir.	despedir.	perseguir.	repedir.
constreñir.	desteñir.	reñir.	repetir.
corregir.	delegir.	recolegir.	retenir.
			revestir.
			seguir.
			subseguir.
			teñir.
			vestir.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Third Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, e = i when tonic or followed by a. Past Definite Stem, e = i when atonic and followed by ie, íó; the i of diphthong is dropped *

177. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB REÍR = TO LAUGH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **reir**, to laugh.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **reindo**, laughing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **reido**, laughed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

rió I laugh (do laugh, am laughing)
ries thou laughest
rie he laughs
rie your honor laughs
reimos we laugh
reís ye laugh
rien they laugh
rien your honors laugh

Imperfect

reia I was laughing
reias thou wast laughing
reia he was laughing
reia your honor was laughing
reíamos we were laughing
reíais ye were laughing
reían they were laughing
reían your honors were laughing

Past Definite

rei I laughed
reíste thou didst laugh
rió he laughed
rió your honor laughed
reímos we laughed
reísteis ye laughed
reíron they laughed
reíron your honors laughed

Present

ria that I laugh
rias that thou laugh
ria that he laugh
ria that your honor laugh
reíamos that we laugh
reíais that ye laugh
rían that they laugh
rían that your honors laugh

Imperfect (First Form)

reiera that I should laugh
reieras that thou shouldst laugh
reiera that he should laugh
reiera that your honor should laugh
reíamos that we should laugh
reíais that ye should laugh
reían that they should laugh
reían that your honors should laugh

Imperfect (Second Form)

reiese that I laughed
reieses that thou laughed
reiese that he laughed
reiese that your honor laughed
reiesemos that we laughed
reieséis that ye laughed
reiesen that they laughed
reiesen that your honors laughed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

or may laugh, etc.

or laughed.

or should laugh, etc.

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

reiré I shall laugh
reirás thou wilt laugh
reirá he will laugh
V. reirá your honor will laugh
reiremos we shall laugh
reiréis ye will laugh
reirán they will laugh
VV. reirán your honors will laugh

Conditional (Consequent)

reiría I should laugh
reirías thou wouldst laugh
reiría he would laugh
V. reiría your honor would laugh
reiríamos we should laugh
reiríais ye would laugh
reirían they would laugh
VV. reirían your honors would laugh

Future

reire I shall laugh
reires thou wilt laugh
reire he will laugh
V. reire your honor will laugh
reiremos we shall laugh
reireis ye will laugh
reiren they will laugh
VV. reiren your honors will laugh

Conditional (Antecedent)

reiría or **reiese** I should laugh
reirías or **reieses** thou shouldst laugh
reiría or **reiese** he should laugh
V. reiría or **V. reiese** your honor should laugh
reiríamos or **reiremos** if we should laugh
reiríais or **reireis** ye should laugh
reirían or **reiresen** they should laugh
VV. reirían or **VV. reiresen** your honor should laugh

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

re	laugh (thou)	no reas	laugh (thou) not
reid	laugh (ye)	no reais	laugh (ye) not
ría	let me laugh	no ría	let me not laugh
rías	let him laugh	no rías	let him not laugh
ría V.	laugh, your honor	no ría V.	laugh not, your honor
ramos	let us laugh	no ramos	let us not laugh
rán	let them laugh	no rán	let them not laugh
rán VV.	laugh, your honors	no rán VV.	laugh not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber reído**, to have laughed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he reído**, etc. I have laughed, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **había reído**, etc. I had laughed, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubé reído**, etc. (when) I had laughed, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré reído**, etc. I shall have laughed, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habría reído**, etc. I should have laughed, etc.

destrir. engreir.

Conjugate in the same manner:

freir.

refreir.

sofreir.

sonreir.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo reído**, having laughed.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya reído**, etc. that I have or may have laughed, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera reído**, etc. that I should have or had laughed, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese reído**, etc. that I had or should have laughed, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere reído**, etc. that I have or shall have laughed, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese reído**, etc. that I should have or had laughed, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fourth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, insert **z** before **c** when followed by a termination commencing with **a** or **o***

178. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB CONOCER = TO KNOW (PERSONS)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **conocer**, to know. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **conociendo**, knowing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **conocido**, known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

conozco I know (do know, am knowing)
conoces thou knowest
conoce he knows
conoce your honor knows
conocemos we know
conocéis ye know
conocen they know
conocen your honors know

Imperfect

conocía I was knowing
conocias thou wast knowing
conocía he was knowing
conocía your honor was knowing
conociamos we were knowing
conocíais ye were knowing
conocían they were knowing
conocían your honors were knowing

Past Definite

conocí I knew
conociste thou didst know
conoció he knew
conoció your honor knew
conocimos we knew
conocisteis ye knew
conocieron they knew
conocieron your honors knew

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

conozca that I know
conozcas that thou know
conozca that he know
conozca that your honor know
conozcamos that we know
conozcáis that ye know
conozcan that they know
conozcan that your honors know

Imperfect (First Form)

conociera that I should know
conocieras that thou shouldst know
conociera that he should know
conociera that your honor should know
conociéramos that we should know
conocierais that ye should know
conocieran that they should know
conocieran that your honors should know

Imperfect (Second Form)

conociese that I knew
conociesses that thou knew
conociese that he knew
conociese that your honor knew
conociésemos that we knew
conocierais that ye knew
conociessen that they knew
conociessen that your honors knew

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

*Conjugate in the same manner as **conocer**, p. 140 :*

abastecer	descaecer	embastecer	enfurecer
aborrecer	desconocer	embebecer	engrandecer
acaecer	descrecer	embellecer	engrumecerse
acontecer	desembebecerse	embermejecer	enhabrecer
acrecer	desembellecer	emblandecer	enloquecer
adolescer	desembravecer	emblanquecer	enlenteecer
adormecer	desempobrecer	embobecer	enmagrecer
agradecer	desencarecer	embosquecer	enmalecer
amanecer	desencrudecer	embravecer	enmarillecerse
amollecer	desencruelecer	embrutecer	enmohecer
amorecer	desenfurecerse	empequeñecer	enmollecer
amortecerse	desenmohecer	emplastecer	enmudecer
anohecer	desenmudecer	emplumecer	ennegrecer
aparecer	desensoberbecer	empobrecer	ennoblecer
apetecer	desentorpecer	empodrecer	enorgullecer
avanecerse	desentristecer	empoltronecerse	enrarecer
blanquecer	desentumecer	enaltecer	enriquecer
canecer	desfallecer	enardecer	enrobustecer
carecer	desfavorecer	encabellecerse	enrojecer
clarecer	desflaquecerse	encalvecer	enroquecer
compadecer	desflorecer	encallecer	enroñecer
comparecer	desfortalecer	encandecer	enruinecerse
complacer	desguarnecer	encanecer	ensandecer
convalecer	deshombrecerse	encarecer	ensoberbecer
crecer	deshumedecer	encarnecer	ensordecer
decrecer	desmerecer	enloquecer	entallecer
defenecer	desobedecer	encorecer	entenebrecer
denegrecer	desparecer	encrudecer	enternecer
desabastecer	desperecer	encruelecer	entigrecerse
desadormecer	desplacer	endentecer	entontecerse
desagradecer	desvanecer	endurecer	entorpecer
desaparecer	desverdecer	enfierecerse	entreparecerse
desbastecer	displacer	enflaquecer	entristecer
desbravecer	embarbecer	enfranquecer	entullecer

entumecer	guarecer	perecer	rejuvenecer
evanecer	guarnecer	permanecer	relentecer
envejecer	herbecer	pertenecer	renacer
enverdecer	humedecer	pimpollecere	repacer
envilecer	languidecer	plastecer	repadecer
enzurdecer	lobreguecer	podreecer	resplandecer
escandecer	merecer	preconocer	restablecer
escarnecer	mohecer	prevalecer	retallecer
esclarecer	nacer	reagradecer	retoñecer
establecer	negreecer	reaparecer	revejecer
estremecer	obedecer	reblandecer	robustecer
fallecer	oscurecer	reconocer	sobrecrecer
favorecer	ofreecer	reconvalecer	tallecer
fenecer	pacer	recrecer	verdecer
florecer	padecer	recrudecer	
fortalecer	palidecer	reflorecer	
gemecer	parecer	rehumedecer	

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fourth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, insert *z* before *c*, when followed by a termination commencing with *a* or *o* *

179. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB LUCIR = TO SHINE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **lucir**, to shine.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **luciendo**, shining.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **lucido**, shone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

luzco I shine (do shine, am shining)
lucas thou shinest
luce he shines
lucas your honor shines
lucimos we shine
lucis ye shine
lucen they shine
lucen your honors shine

Imperfect

lucía I was shining
lucias thou wast shining
lucía he was shining
lucias your honor was shining
luciamos we were shining
luciais ye were shining
lucian they were shining
lucian your honors were shining

Past Definite

luci I shone
luciste thou didst shine
lució he shone
lució your honors shone
lucisteis we shone
lucieron ye shone
lucieron your honors shone

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

luzca that I shine
luzcas that thou shine
luzca that he shine
luzca that your honor shine
luzcamos that we shine
luzcáis that ye shine
luzcan that they shine
luzcan that your honors shine

Imperfect (First Form)

luciera that I should shine
lucieras that thou shouldst shine
luciera that he should shine
luciera that your honor should shine
lucieramos that we should shine
lucierais that ye should shine
lucieran that they should shine
lucieran that your honors should shine

Imperfect (Second Form)

luciese that I shone
lucieses that thou shone
luciese that he shone
luciese that your honor shone
luciesemos that we shone
lucieséis that ye shone
luciesen that they shone
luciesen that your honors shone

* Where these changes occur, the letter is printed in italic.

Future

luciré I shall shine
lucirás thou wilt shine
lucirá he will shine
V. lucirá your honor will shine
luciremos we shall shine
luciréis ye will shine
lucirán they will shine
VV. lucirán your honors will shine

Future

luciere I shine
lucieres thou shalt shine
luciere he shine
V. lucieros your honors shine
luciereis ye shine
lucieren they shine
VV. lucieren your honors shine

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunquę, etc.

or shall shine,
 etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

luciría I should shine
lucirías thou wouldst shine
luciría he would shine
V. luciría your honor would shine
luciriamos we should shine
luciríamos ye would shine
lucirían they would shine
VV. lucirían your honors would shine

Conditional (Antecedent)

luciera I should shine
lucieras thou shouldst shine
luciera he should shine
V. luciera your honor should shine
lucieramos we should shine
lucieramos if ye should shine
lucierais they should shine
lucieran or **VV. luciesen** your honors should shine

or shone, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

lucе shine (thou)
lucid shine (ye)

luzca let me shine
luzca let him shine
luzca V. shine, your honor
luzcamos let us shine
luzcan let them shine
luzcan VV. shine, your honors

no luzcas shine (thou) not
no luzcáis shine (ye) not

no luzca let me not shine
no luzca let him not shine
no luzca V. shine not, your honor
no luzcamos let us not shine
no luzcan let them not shine
no luzcan VV. shine not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber lucido**, to have shone.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo lucido**, having shone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he lucido**, etc. I have shone, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia lucido**, etc. I had shone, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hube lucido**, etc. (when) I had shone, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré lucido**, etc. I shall have shone, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría lucido**, etc. I should have shone, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya lucido**, etc. that I have or may have shone, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera lucido**, etc. that I should have or had shone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese lucido**, etc. that I had or should have shone, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiera lucido**, etc. that I have or shall have shone, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese lucido**, etc. that I should have or had shone, etc.

destlucir.

enlucir.

entrelucir.

Conjugate in the same manner:
prelucir.

relucir.

traslucirse.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fifth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, insert **y** before ending when stem is tonic or followed by **a** or **o***

180. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ATRIBUIR = TO ASCRIBE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **atribuir**, to ascribe. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **atribuyendo**, ascribing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **atribuido**, ascribed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

atribuyo I ascribe (do ascribe, am ascribing)
atribuyes thou ascribest
atribuye he ascribes
 V. **atribuye** your honor ascribes
atribuimos we ascribe
atribuis ye ascribe
atribuyen they ascribe
 VV. **atribuyen** your honors ascribe

Imperfect

atribuía I was ascribing
atribuías thou wast ascribing
atribuía he was ascribing
 V. **atribuía** your honor was ascribing
atribuíamos we were ascribing
atribuísais ye were ascribing
atribuían they were ascribing
 VV. **atribuían** your honors were ascribing

Past Definite

atribuí I ascribed
atribuiste thou didst ascribe
atribuyó he ascribed
 V. **atribuyó** your honor ascribed
atribuimos we ascribed
atribuisteis ye ascribed
atribuyeron they ascribed
 VV. **atribuyeron** your honors ascribed

Future

atribuiré I shall ascribe
atribuirás thou wilt ascribe
atribuirá he will ascribe
 V. **atribuirá** your honor will ascribe
atribuiremos we shall ascribe
atribuiréis ye will ascribe
atribuirán they will ascribe
 VV. **atribuirán** your honors will ascribe

* Where the changes occur the letter is printed in italic.

NOTE. —

See also orthographic change under **creer**, p. 68.

atribuya that I ascribe
atribuyas that thou ascribe
atribuya that he ascribe
 V. **atribuya** that your honor ascribe
atribuyamos that we ascribe
atribuyáis that ye ascribe
atribuyan that they ascribe
 VV. **atribuyan** that your honors ascribe

Imperfect (First Form)

atribuyera that I should ascribe
atribuyeras that thou shouldst ascribe
atribuyera that he should ascribe
 V. **atribuyera** that your honor should ascribe
atribuyéramos that we should ascribe
atribuyerais that ye should ascribe
atribuyeran that they should ascribe
 VV. **atribuyeran** that your honors should ascribe

Imperfect (Second Form)

atribuyese that I ascribed
atribuyeses that thou ascribed
atribuyese that he ascribed
 V. **atribuyese** that your honor ascribed
atribuyésemos that we ascribed
atribuyerais that ye ascribed
atribuyesen that they ascribed
 VV. **atribuyesen** that your honors ascribed

Future

atribuyere I ascribe
atribuyeres thou ascribe
atribuyere he ascribe
 V. **atribuyere** your honor ascribe
atribuyéremos we ascribe
atribuyerais if, when, although, etc.
atribuyeren they ascribe
 VV. **atribuyeren** your honors ascribe

si, cuando, mientras, etc.

or shall ascribe, etc.

or should ascribe, etc.

or may ascribe, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

atribuiria I should ascribe
atribuirias thou wouldst ascribe
atribuiria he would ascribe
atribuiria your honor would ascribe
atribuiriamos we should ascribe
atribuirian they would ascribe
atribuirian your honors would ascribe
 V. **atribuiriamos**
 VV. **atribuirian**

Conditional (Antecedent)

{ si }	atribuyera atribuyeras atribuyera V. atribuyera atribuyéramos atribuyerais atribuyeran VV. atribuyeran	or atribuyese or atribuyeses or atribuyese or V. atribuyese or atribuyésemos or atribuyéséis or atribuyesen or VV. atribuyesen	I should ascribe thou shouldst ascribe he should ascribe your honor should ascribe we should ascribe they should ascribe your honors should ascribe
	or atribuyera or V. atribuyera or atribuyéramos or atribuyerais or VV. atribuyeran	or atribuyese or atribuyeses or V. atribuyese or atribuyésemos or atribuyéséis or atribuyesen or VV. atribuyesen	I should ascribe thou shouldst ascribe he should ascribe your honor should ascribe we should ascribe they should ascribe your honors should ascribe

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

atribuye atribuid atribuya atribuya atribuya V. atribuyamos atribuyan atribuyan VV.	ascribe (thou) ascribe (ye) let me ascribe let him ascribe ascribe, your honor let us ascribe let them ascribe ascribe, your honors	no atribuyas no atribuyais no atribuya no atribuya V. no atribuyamos no atribuyan no atribuyan VV.	ascribe (thou) not ascribe (ye) not let me not ascribe let him not ascribe ascribe not, your honor let us not ascribe let them not ascribe ascribe not, your honors
--	--	---	--

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber atribuido**, to have ascribed. COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo atribuido**, having ascribed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he atribuido**, etc. I have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia atribuido**, etc. I had ascribed, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo atribuido**, etc. (when) I had ascribed, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habrá atribuido**, etc. I shall have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria atribuido**, etc. I should have ascribed, etc.

circuir. **derruir.**
concluir. **desobstruir.**
confluir. **destruir.**
constituir. **difluir.**
contribuir. **dluir.**

Conjugate in the same manner:

luir.
muir.
obstruir.
prostituir.
recluir.
reconstruir.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya atribuido**, etc. that I have or may have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera atribuido**, etc. that I should have or had ascribed, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese atribuido**, etc. that I had or should have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere atribuido**, etc. that I have or shall have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese atribuido**, etc. that I should have or had ascribed, etc.

refluir.
rehuir.
restituir.
retribuir.
restituir.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fifth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, insert **y** before ending when stem is tonic, or when followed by **a** or **o** *

181. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ARGÜIR = TO ARGUE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **argüir**, to argue. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **arguyendo**, arguing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **argüido**, argued.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

arguyo	I argue (do argue, am arguing)
arguyes	thou arguest
arguye	he argues
V. arguyes	your honor argues
arguimos	we argue
arguis	they argue
arguyen	your honors argue
VV. arguyen	

Imperfect

argüia	I was arguing
argüias	thou wast arguing
argüia	he was arguing
V. argüias	your honor was arguing
argüiamos	we were arguing
argüiais	they were arguing
argüian	your honors were arguing
VV. argüian	

Past Definite

argüi	I argued
argüiste	thou didst argue
arguyó	he argued
V. arguyó	your honor argued
argüimos	we argued
argüisteis	ye argued
argüieron	they argued
VV. argüieron	your honors argued

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

arguya	that I argue
arguyas	that thou argue
arguya	that he argue
V. arguya	that your honor argue
arguyamos	that we argue
arguyais	that ye argue
arguyan	that they argue
VV. arguyan	that your honors argue

Imperfect (First Form)

arguyera	that I should argue
arguyeras	that thou shouldst argue
arguyera	that he should argue
V. arguyera	that your honor should argue
arguyéramos	that we should argue
arguyerais	that ye should argue
arguyeran	that they should argue
VV. arguyeran	that your honors should argue

Imperfect (Second Form)

arguyese	that I argued
arguyeses	that thou argued
arguyese	that he argued
V. arguyese	that your honor argued
arguyésemos	that we argued
arguyeséis	that ye argued
arguyesen	that they argued
VV. arguyesen	that your honors argued

* Where these changes occur the letter is printed in italic. NOTE. — See also orthographic change under **creer**, p. 68.

Future

argülré I shall argue
 argülrás thou wilt argue
 argülrá he will argue
 V. argülrá your honor will argue
 argülrémós we shall argue
 argülréís they will argue
 argülrán your honors will argue
 VV. argülrán

Conditional (Consequent)

argülría I should argue
 argülrías thou wouldst argue
 argülría he would argue
 V. argülría your honor would argue
 argülríámós we should argue
 argülríáís they would argue
 argülríáían your honors would argue
 VV. argülríáían

Future

argülyere I argue
 argülyeres thou argue
 argülyere he argue
 V. argülyere your honor argue
 argülyerémós we argue
 argülyeréís they argue
 argülyerén your honors argue
 VV. argülyerén

Conditional (Antecedent)

argülyera or argülyese I should argue
 argülyeras or argülyeses thou shouldst argue
 argülyera or argülyese he should argue
 V. argülyera or V. argülyese if your honor should argue
 argülyerámós or argülyerémós if we should argue
 argülyeráís or argülyeréís they should argue
 argülyeráían or VV. argülyerésén your honors should argue
 VV. argülyeráían

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

argüye argue (thou)
 argüydí argue (ye)
 argüya let me argue
 argüya V. let him argue
 argüyámós argue, your honor
 argüyáís let us argue
 argüyan VV. let them argue
 argüyan V. argue, your honors

no argüyas argue (thou) not
 no argüydís argue (ye) not
 no argüya let me not argue
 no argüya V. let him not argue
 no argüyámós argue not, your honor
 no argüyáís let us not argue
 no argüyan VV. let them not argue
 no argüyan V. argue not, your honors

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber argüldo**, to have argued.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he argüldo**, etc. I have argued, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **había argüldo**, etc. I had argued, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubiera argüldo**, etc. (when) I had argued, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **habré argüldo**, etc. I shall have argued, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **habría argüldo**, etc. I should have argued, etc.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo argüldo**, having argued.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya argüldo**, etc. that I have *or* may have argued, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiera argüldo**, etc. that I should have *or* had argued, etc.
 Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiese argüldo**, etc. that I had *or* should have argued, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere argüldo**, etc. that I have *or* shall have argued, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese argüldo**, etc. that I should have *or* had argued, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

redargüir, to retort.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, First Conjugation

Past Definite stem, **Anduv***

182. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ANDAR** = TO GO (INDEFINITELY)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **andar**, to go. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **andanda**, going. PAST PARTICIPLE: **andado**, gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

ando I go (do go, am going)
andas thou goest
anda he goes
andamos your honor goes
andáis ye go
andan they go
andan your honor goes

Imperfect

andaba I was going
andabas thou wast going
andaba he was going
andaba your honor was going
andabamos we were going
andabais ye were going
andaban they were going
andaban your honors were going

Past Definite

anduve I went
anduviste thou didst go
anduvo he went
anduvimos your honor went
anduvisteis ye went
anduvieron they went
anduvieron your honors went

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

ande that I go
andes that thou go
ande that he go
ande that your honor go
andemos that we go
andéis that ye go
anden that they go
anden that your honors go

Imperfect (First Form)

andeviera that I should go
andevieras that thou shouldst go
andeviera that he should go
andevieras that your honor should go
andevieramos that we should go
andevierais that ye should go
andevieran that they should go
andevieran that your honors should go

Imperfect (Second Form)

andeviese that I went
andevieses that thou went
andeviese that he went
andeviese that your honor went
andeviesemos that we went
andevieseis that ye went
andeviesen that they went
andeviesen that your honors went

* Wherever the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

andaré I shall go
 thou wilt go
andarás he will go
andará your honor will go
andaremos we shall go
andareis ye will go
andarán they will go
andarán your honors will go

Conditional (Consequent)

andaría I should go
 thou wouldst go
andarías he would go
andaría your honor would go
andaríamos we should go
andaríais ye would go
andarían they would go
andarían your honors would go

si: cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

si

Future

andariere I go
andarieres thou go
andariere he go
andariere your honor go
andariéremos we go
andariéis ye go
andarién they go
andarién your honors go

Conditional (Antecedent)

andariere or **andariése** I should go
andariere or **andariése** thou shouldst go
andariere or **andariése** he should go
andariere or **andariése** your honor should go
andariéremos or **andariésemos** if we should go
andariéis or **andariéis** ye should go
andarién or **andarién** they should go
andarién or **andarién** your honors should go

or shall go, etc.

or went, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

anda	go (thou)	no andes	go (thou) not
andad	go (ye)	no andéis	go (ye) not
ande	let me go	no ande	let me not go
ande	let him go	no ande	let him not go
ande	go, your honor	no ande	go not, your honor
andemos	let us go	no andemos	let us not go
anden	let them go	no anden	let them not go
anden	go, your honors	no anden	go not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber andado**, to have gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

he andado, etc. I have gone, etc.
habia andado, etc. I had gone, etc.
hubiese andado, etc. (when) I had gone, etc.
habré andado, etc. I shall have gone, etc.
habría andado, etc. I should have gone, etc.

Comp. Pres.
Comp. Imp.
Comp. Past. Def.
Comp. Fut.
Comp. Cond.

- Andar** expresses a general, ill-defined going, or refers to inanimate objects or animals, e. g. *andar á gradas*, to go on all fours; *mi reloj anda*; *mula, anda*.
- Ir** expresses a going in a definite direction, and refers to persons, e. g. *voy al teatro*, I am going to the theater.
- Ir á** means, to be going to, to be about to, e. g. *voy á decirte*, I am going to tell you.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desandar, to retrograde, to go back the same way.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo andado**, having gone.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya andado, etc. that I have or may have gone, etc.
hubiera andado, etc. that I should have or had gone, etc.
hubiese andado, etc. that I had or should have gone, etc.
hubiere andado, etc. that I have or shall have gone, etc.
andado, etc. that I should have or had gone, etc.

Comp. Pres.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)
Comp. Imp. (2d form)
Comp. Fut.
Comp. Cond.

haya andado, etc.
hubiera andado, etc.
hubiese andado, etc.
hubiere andado, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **quep**, before **a** or **o**. Past Definite Stem, **cup**. Future Stem, **cabr***

183. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB CABER (en) = TO HOLD, TO BE CONTAINED IN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **caber**, to hold.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **cabiendo**, holding.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **cabido**, held.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

quepo
cabes
cabe
V. **cabe**
cabemos
cabéis
caben
VV. **caben**

I hold (do hold, am holding)
thou holdest
he holds
your honor holds
we hold
ye hold
they hold
your honors hold

Imperfect

cabia
cabias
cabia
V. **cabia**
cabíamos
cabíais
cabían
VV. **cabían**

I was holding
thou wast holding
he was holding
your honor was holding
we were holding
ye were holding
they were holding
your honors were holding

Past Definite

cupé
cabiste
cupí
V. **cupí**
cubimos
cubisteis
cubieron
VV. **cubieron**

I held
thou didst hold
he held
your honor held
we held
ye held
they held
your honors held

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

quepa
quepas
quepa
V. **quepa**
quepamos
quepáis
quepan
VV. **quepan**

that I hold
that thou hold
that he hold
that your honor hold
that we hold
that ye hold
that they hold
that your honors hold

Imperfect (First Form)

cupiera
cupieras
cupiera
V. **cupiera**
cupiéramos
cupierais
cupieran
VV. **cupieran**

that I should hold
that thou shouldst hold
that he should hold
that your honor should hold
that we should hold
that ye should hold
that they should hold
that your honors should hold

Imperfect (Second Form)

cupiesse
cupieses
cupiesse
V. **cupiesse**
cupiésemos
cupiescís
cupiesen
VV. **cupiesen**

that I held
that thou held
that he held
that your honor held
that we held
that ye held
that they held
that your honors held

* Wherever the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>cabré cabrás cabrá cabrá cabremos cabréis cabrán cabrán</p> <p>V.</p> <p>VV. cabrán</p>	<p>I shall hold thou wilt hold he will hold your honor will hold we shall hold ye will hold they will hold your honors will hold</p>
---	---

<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>cabría cabrían cabría cabría cabría cabrían cabrían</p> <p>V.</p> <p>VV. cabrían</p>	<p>I should hold thou wouldst hold he would hold your honor would hold we should hold ye would hold they would hold your honors would hold</p>
--	---

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>cabriere cabriere cabriéremos cabriéreis cabrieren</p> <p>V.</p> <p>VV. cabrieren</p>	<p>I hold thou hold he hold your honor hold we hold ye hold they hold your honors hold</p>
---	---

<p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>cabriese cabriese cabriese cabriese cabriésemos cabriésemos cabriésemos cabriésen cabriésen</p> <p>or</p> <p>cabriera cabriera cabriera cabriera cabriáramos cabriáramos cabriáramos cabriáran cabriáran</p> <p>V.</p> <p>VV. cabriáran</p>	<p>I should hold thou shouldst hold he should hold your honor should hold we should hold ye should hold they should hold your honors should hold</p>
--	---

<p>cabre cabed</p>	<p>hold (thou) hold (ye)</p>
---------------------------------------	---

<p>quepa quepa quepa quepamos quepan quepan</p>	<p>let me hold let him hold hold, your honor let us hold let them hold hold, your honors</p>
--	---

<p>quepa quepa quepa quepamos quepan quepan</p>	<p>let me not hold let him not hold hold not, your honor let us not hold let them not hold hold not, your honors</p>
--	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p>no quepas no quepáis</p>	<p>hold (thou) not hold (ye) not</p>
--	---

<p>no quepa no quepa no quepa no quepamos no quepan no quepan</p>	<p>let me not hold let him not hold hold not, your honor let us not hold let them not hold hold not, your honors</p>
--	---

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo cabido**, having held.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya cabido**, etc. that I have *or* may have held, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **hubiera cabido**, etc. that I should have *or* had held, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubiese cabido**, etc. that I had *or* should have held, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere cabido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have held, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera** or **hubiese** that I should have *or* had held, etc.

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber cabido**, to have held.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he cabido**, etc. I have held, etc.
 Comp. Imp. **haya cabido**, etc. I had held, etc.
 Comp. Past Def. **hubiera cabido**, etc. (when) I had held, etc.
 Comp. Fut. **hubiere cabido**, etc. I shall have held, etc.
 Comp. Cond. **hubiera cabido**, etc. I should have held, etc.

1. In this sense **cabar** is always construed with **en**; e. g. *en este cuarto caben cien personas*, this room holds a hundred persons.
 2. **Cabar** signifies also "to be capable of," in a moral sense; e. g. *todo cabe en él*, he is capable of anything.
 3. **Cabar** is also used impersonally, meaning "it is possible;" e. g. *se caben*, it is possible.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, **dig** before **a, o**; **dic** when tonic and followed by **e**. Past definite stem, **dij**. Future stem, **dir***

184. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB DECIR = TO TELL, SAY

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **decir**, to tell.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **diciedo**, telling.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **dicido**, told.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

digo	I tell (do tell, am telling)
dices	thou tellest
dice	he tells
V. dices	your honor tells
decimos	we tell
decís	ye tell
dicen	they tell
VV. dicen	your honors tell

Imperfect

decía	I was telling
decías	thou wast telling
decía	he was telling
V. decía	your honor or was telling
decíamos	we were telling
decíais	ye were telling
decían	they were telling
VV. decían	your honors were telling

Past Definite

dije	I told
dijiste	thou didst tell
dijo	he told
V. dijo	your honor told
dijimos	we told
dijistéis	ye told
dijeron	they told
VV. dijeron	your honors told

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

diga	that I tell
digas	that thou tell
diga	that he tell
V. diga	that your honor tell
digamos	that we tell
digáis	that ye tell
digán	that they tell
VV. digán	that your honors tell

Imperfect (First Form)

dijera	that I should tell
dijeras	that thou shouldst tell
dijera	that he should tell
V. dijera	that your honor should tell
dijéramos	that we should tell
dijerais	that ye should tell
dijeran	that they should tell
VV. dijeran	that your honors should tell

Imperfect (Second Form)

dijese	that I told
dijeses	that thou told
dijese	that he told
V. dijese	that your honor told
dijésemos	that we told
dijeséis	that ye told
dijesen	that they told
VV. dijesen	that your honors told

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in *italic*. Notice the irregular past participle, **dicido**.

Future

diré I shall tell
dirás thou wilt tell
dirá he will tell
dirá your honor will tell
diremos we shall tell
diréis they will tell
dirán your honors will tell
dirán your honors will tell

Conditional (Consequent)

diría I should tell
dirías thou wouldst tell
diría he would tell
diría your honor would tell
diríamos we should tell
diríais they would tell
dirían they would tell
dirían your honors would tell

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

V. **direre**
direrem
direretis
direren
VV. **direrent**

Future

V. **dijere**
dijeres
dijere
dijerem
dijeretis
dijeren
VV. **dijerent**

I tell
 thou tell
 he tell
 your honor tell
 we tell
 ye tell
 they tell
 your honors tell

or shall tell etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

V. **dijese**
dijeses
dijese
dijesemos
dijesetis
dijesen
VV. **dijesen**

I should tell
 thou shouldst tell
 he should tell
 your honor should tell
 we should tell
 ye should tell
 they should tell
 your honors should tell

or told etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

di	tell (thou)	no digas	tell (thou) not
decid	tell (ye)	no digáis	tell (ye) not
diga	let me tell	no diga	let me not tell
diga V.	let him tell	no diga V.	let him not tell
digan	tell, your honor	no digamos	tell not, your honor
digan V.	let us tell	no digan V.	let us not tell
digan VV.	let them tell		let them not tell
	tell, your honors		tell not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **dice** is abbreviated to **di**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber dicho**, to have told.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he dicho**, etc. I have told, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hobia dicho**, etc. I had told, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo dicho**, etc. (when) I had told, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré dicho**, etc. I shall have told, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría dicho**, etc. I should have told, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo dicho**, having told.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya dicho**, etc. that I have or may have told, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera dicho**, etc. that I should have or had told, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese dicho**, etc. that I had or should have told, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere dicho**, etc. that I have or shall have told, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese dicho**, etc. that I should have or had told, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

antedecir. **bendecir.** **contradecir.** **desdecir.** **entredecir.** **interdecir.** **maldecir.** **predecir.** **rebenedecir.**

1. Except in the second person singular imperative affirmative, *antedecir*, *bendecir*, etc.
 2. *Bendecir*, *maldecir*, have also Pp. *benedito*, *maldito*. Fut. *benedeciré*, *maldeciré*, etc.; conditional, *benedeciría*, *maldeciría*, etc. Usage varies concerning the fut. and the condit. ind. of the other verbs, with the inclination towards the regular forms.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, traduzc, before a or o. Past Definite Stem, traduj *

185. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB TRADUCIR = TO TRANSLATE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **traducir**, to translate. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **traduciendo**, translating. PAST PARTICIPLE: **traducido**, translated.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I translate (do translate, am translating)
 thou translatest
 he translates
 your honor translates
 we translate
 ye translate
 they translate
 your honors translate

traduzco
traduces
traduce
 V. **traduce**
traducimos
traducis
traducen
 VV. **traducen**

Imperfect

I was translating
 thou wast translating
 he was translating
 your honor was translating
 we were translating
 ye were translating
 they were translating
 your honors were translating

traducia
traducias
traducia
 V. **traducia**
traduciamos
traduciais
traducian
 VV. **traducian**

Past Definite

I translated
 thou didst translate
 he translated
 your honor translated
 we translated
 ye translated
 they translated
 your honors translated

tradujé
tradujiste
tradujo
tradujo
 V. **tradujo**
tradujimos
tradujisteis
tradujeron
 VV. **tradujeron**

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I translate
 that thou translate
 that he translate
 that your honor translate
 that we translate
 that ye translate
 that they translate
 that your honors translate

traduzca
traduzcas
traduzca
 V. **traduzca**
traduzcamos
traduzcáis
traduzcan
 VV. **traduzcan**

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should translate
 that thou shouldst translate
 that he should translate
 that your honor should translate
 that we should translate
 that ye should translate
 that they should translate
 that your honors should translate

tradujera
tradujeras
tradujera
 V. **tradujera**
tradujéramos
tradujerais
tradujeran
 VV. **tradujeran**

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I translated
 that thou translated
 that he translated
 that your honors translated
 that we translated
 that ye translated
 that they translated
 that your honor translated

tradujese
tradujeses
tradujese
 V. **tradujese**
tradujésemos
tradujeséis
tradujesen
 VV. **tradujesen**

or used to trans-
 late.

or may translate,
 etc.

or translated.

or should trans-
 late, etc.

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

traduciré
traducirás
traducirá
traducirá
traduciremos
traduciréis
traducirán
VV. traducirán

I shall translate
 thou wilt translate
 he will translate
 your honor will translate
 we shall translate
 ye will translate
 they will translate
 your honors will translate

Conditional (Consequent)

traduciría
traducirías
traduciría
traduciría
traduciríamos
traduciríais
traducirían
VV. traducirían

I should translate
 thou shouldst translate
 he would translate
 your honor would translate
 we should translate
 ye would translate
 they would translate
 your honor would translate

Future

tradu/ere
tradu/eres
tradu/ere
tradu/ere
tradu/eremos
tradu/eréis
tradu/erén
VV. tradu/erén

I translate
 thou translate
 he translate
 your honor translate
 we translate
 ye translate
 they translate
 your honors translate

if, although, while, etc. } *or shall trans-*
late, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

tradu/ese
tradu/eses
tradu/ese
tradu/ese
tradu/eseamos
tradu/eseis
tradu/esen
VV. tradu/esen

I should translate
 thou shouldst translate
 he should translate
 your honor should translate
 we should translate
 ye should translate
 they should translate
 your honors should translate

if } *or translated.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

traduce
traducid
traduzca
traduzca
traduzca
traduzcamos
traduzcan
traduzcan
VV. traduzcan

translate (thou)
 translate (ye)
 let me translate
 let him translate
 translate, your honor
 let us translate
 let them translate
 translate, your honors

no traduzcas
no traduzcás
no traduzca
no traduzca
no traduzca
no traduzcamos
no traduzcan
no traduzcan
VV. traduzcan

translate (thou) not
 translate (ye) not
 let me not translate
 let him not translate
 translate not, your honor
 let us not translate
 let them not translate
 translate not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber traducido**, to have translated.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he traducido**, etc. I have translated, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había traducido**, etc. I had translated, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo traducido**, etc. (when) I had translated, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habrá traducido**, etc. I shall have translated, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría traducido**, etc. I should have translated, etc.

deducir.
conducir.

All follow **ducir**, now obsolete.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo traducido**, having translated.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya traducido**, etc. that I have *or* may have translated, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera traducido**, etc. that I should have *or* had translated, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese traducido**, etc. that I had *or* should have translated, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere traducido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have translated, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese traducido**, etc. that I should have *or* had translated, etc.

inducir.
introducir.

reducir.
reproducir.

Conjugate in the same manner:

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **hag**, before **a** or **o**. Past Definite Stem, **hic**. Future Stem, **har***

186. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB HACER = TO MAKE, TO DO

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **hacer**, to make. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **haciendo**, making. PAST PARTICIPLE: **hecho**, made.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

hac-o
hac-es
hac-e
hac-e
hacemos
hacéis
hac-en
hac-en

V.

hac-i-a
hac-i-as
hac-i-a
hac-i-amos
hac-i-áis
hac-i-an
hac-i-an

V.

hag-a
hag-as
hag-a
hag-amos
hag-áis
hag-an
hag-an

V.

hac-er-a
hac-er-as
hac-er-a
hac-er-amos
hac-er-áis
hac-er-an
hac-er-an

V.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

that I make
that thou make
that he make
that your honor make
that we make
that ye make
that they make
that your honors make

} or may make,
etc.

Imperfect

I was making
thou wast making
he was making
your honor was making
we were making
ye were making
they were making
your honors were making

} or used to make.

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should make
that thou shouldst make
that he should make
that your honor should make
that we should make
that ye should make
that they should make
that your honors should make

} or make.

Past Definite

I made
thou didst make
he made
your honor made
ye made
they made
your honors made

V.

hic-i-er-a
hic-i-er-as
hic-i-er-a
hic-i-er-amos
hic-i-er-áis
hic-i-er-an
hic-i-er-an

V.

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I made
that thou made
that he made
that your honor made
that we made
that ye made
that they made
that your honors made

} or should make,
etc.

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics. Notice the irregular past participle, *hecho*.

Future

haré I shall make
harás thou wilt make
hará he will make
hará your honor will make
haremos we shall make
haréis ye will make
harán they will make
harán your honors will make

Conditional (Consequent)

haría I should make
harías thou wouldst make
haría he would make
haría your honor would make
haramos we should make
hariais ye would make
harían they would make
harían your honors would make

si cuando, mientras, etc.

hiciera
hicieras
hiciera
hicieramos
hicierais
hicieran
hicieran

hiciera
hicieras
hiciera
hicieramos
hicierais
hicieran
hicieran

or shall make, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

hiciese
hicieses
hiciese
hiciesemos
hiciesais
hiciesen
hiciesen

or made.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

no hagas make (thou) not
no hagas make (ye) not

no hagas let me not make
no hagas let him not make
no hagas make not, your honor
no hagamos let us not make
no hagamos let them not make
no hagan make not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **hace** is abbreviated to **haz**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber hecho**, to have made.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he hecho**, etc. I have made, etc.
Comp. Imp. **haya hecho**, etc. I had made, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubie hecho**, etc. (when) I had made, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré hecho**, etc. I shall have made, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría hecho**, etc. I should have made, etc.

deshacer.
rehacer.

and also
contrahacer.

Except in the second person singular imperative affirmative *contrahaz* or *contrahace* or *liqueface* or *liquefas*, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo hecho**, having made.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya hecho, etc. that I have or may have made, etc.
hubiese hecho, etc. that I should have or had made, etc.
hubiere hecho, etc. that I had or should have made, etc.
hubiera hecho, etc. that I have or shall have made, etc.
hubiera hecho, etc. that I should have or had made, etc.

satisfacer.
tumefacerse.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **pued**, when tonic. Past Definite Stem, **pued**. Future Stem, **podr** *

187. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB PODER = TO BE ABLE (CAN)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **podar**, to be able. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **podiendo**, being able. PAST PARTICIPLE: **podido**, been able.
INDICATIVE MOOD. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present
I am able
thou art able
he is able
your honor is able
we are able
ye are able
your honors are able
VV. **puedo**
puedas
puede
puede
podemos
podéis
pueden

Imperfect
I was able
thou wast able
he was able
your honor was able
we were able
ye were able
your honors were able
VV. **podia**
podias
podia
podia
podíamos
podíais
podían
podían

Past Definite
I was able
thou wast able
he was able
your honor was able
we were able
ye were able
your honors were able
VV. **pude**
podiste
pudo
pudo
podimos
podisteis
podieron
podieron

Present
that I be able
that thou be able
that he be able
that your honor be able
that we be able
that ye be able
that they be able
that your honors be able
VV. **pueda**
puedas
pueda
pueda
podamos
podáis
puedan

Imperfect (First Form)
that I should be able
that thou shouldst be able
that he should be able
that your honor should be able
that we should be able
that ye should be able
that they should be able
that your honors should be able
VV. **podiera**
podieras
podiera
podiera
podieramos
podierais
podieran

Imperfect (Second Form)
that I were able
that thou were able
that he were able
that your honor were able
that we were able
that ye were able
that they were able
that your honors were able
VV. **podiese**
podieses
podiese
podiese
podiesemos
podieséis
podiesen

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italic.

Future

podré I shall be able
podrás thou wilt be able
podrá he will be able
podrá your honor will be able
podremos we shall be able
podréis ye will be able
podrán they will be able
podrán your honors will be able

Conditional (Consequent)

podría I should be able
podrías thou wouldst be able
podría he would be able
podría your honor would be able
podríamos we should be able
podrías ye would be able
podrían they would be able
podrían your honors would be able

Future

podiere I should be able
podieres thou be able
podiere he be able
podiere your honor be able
podieremos we be able
podieréis ye be able
podieren they be able
podieren your honors be able

V. **podiere** I should be able
podieréis ye should be able
podieren they should be able

VV. **podieren** your honors should be able

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

podiera or **podiese** I should be able
podieras or **podieses** thou shouldst be able
podiera or **podiese** he should be able
podiera or **podiese** your honor should be able
podieramos or **podiesemos** if we should be able
podierais or **podieserais** if ye should be able
podieran or **podieseran** if they should be able
podieran or **podiesen** your honors should be able

or were able.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber podido**, to have been able.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo podido**, having been able.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he podido**, etc. I have been able, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había podido**, etc. I had been able, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo podido**, etc. (when) I had been able, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré podido**, etc. I shall have been able, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría podido**, etc. I should have been able, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya podido**, etc. that I have *or* may have been able, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera podido**, etc. that I should have *or* had been able, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese podido**, etc. that I had *or* should have been able, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere podido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have been able, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese** **podido**, etc. that I should have *or* had been able, etc.

NOTE.—As a neuter verb (in the sense of to be able) **podér**, on account of its meaning, is usually considered as having no true imperative and is so treated by grammarians. But its use is exactly the same as that of **nacer**, to be born, see p. 198. And under certain circumstances an imperative would be legitimate, e. g.: The Lord said "be able," and he was able (to do so and so). The Grammar of the Spanish Academy gives the true imperative **puede** *há*; and, as in the case of *nacer*, the plural **poded** could just as well be used.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, pong before a or o. Past definite stem, pus. Future stem, pondr*
188. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB PONER = TO PUT, TO PLACE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **poner**, to put. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **poniendo**, putting. PAST PARTICIPLE: **puesto**, put.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

pong-o I put (do put, am putting)
pones thou puttest
pone he puts
ponemos your honor puts
ponéis we put
ponen ye put
ponen they put
ponen your honors put

Imperfect

ponia I was putting
ponias thou wast putting
ponia he was putting
ponia your honor was putting
poníamos we were putting
poniais ye were putting
ponian they were putting
ponian your honors were putting

Past Definite

pusse I put
pusiste thou didst put
puso he put
puso your honor put
pusimos we put
pusistis ye put
pusieron they put
pusieron your honors put

Future

pondré I shall put
pondrás thou wilt put
pondrá he will put
pondrán your honor will put
pondremos we shall put
pondréis ye will put
pondrán they will put
pondrán your honors will put

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

ponga that I put
pongas that thou put
ponga that he put
ponga that your honor put
pongamos that we put
pongáis that ye put
pongan that they put
pongan that your honors put

Imperfect (First Form)

pusiera that I should put
pusieras that thou shouldst put
pusiera that he should put
pusiera that your honor should put
pusiéramos that we should put
pusierais that ye should put
pusieran that they should put
pusieran that your honors should put

Imperfect (Second Form)

pusiese that I put
pusieses that thou put
pusiese that he put
pusiese that your honor put
pusiésemos that we put
pusierais that ye put
pusiesen that they put
pusiesen that your honors put

Future

pusiere I put
pusieres thou put
pusiere he put
pusiere your honor put
pusiéremos we put
pusieréis ye put
pusieren they put
pusieren your honors put

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.
si, although, while, etc.

Notice the irregular past part, *puesto*.

Conditional (Consequent)

pon <i>dr</i> ia	I should put
pon <i>dr</i> ias	thou shouldst put
pon <i>dr</i> ia	he would put
V. pon <i>dr</i> iamos	your honor would put
pon <i>dr</i> iais	we should put
pon <i>dr</i> ian	ye would put
VV. pon <i>dr</i> ian	they would put
	your honors would put

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	V. pus <i>er</i> am pus <i>er</i> ais pus <i>er</i> an	or or or or or or or	pus <i>er</i> ese pus <i>er</i> eses pus <i>er</i> ese pus <i>er</i> ese pus <i>er</i> esemos pus <i>er</i> esais pus <i>er</i> esen	I should put	thou shouldst put	he should put	your honor should put	we should put	ye should put	they should put	your honors should put

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

pon	put (thou)	no pon <i>gas</i>	put (thou) not
poned	put (ye)	no pon <i>gais</i>	put (ye) not
pon <i>ga</i>	let me put	no pon <i>ga</i>	let me not put
pon <i>ga</i>	let him put	no pon <i>ga</i>	let him not put
pon <i>ga</i> V.	put, your honor	no pon <i>ga</i> V.	put not your honor
pon <i>gamos</i>	let us put	no pon <i>gamos</i>	let us not put
pon <i>gan</i>	let them put	no pon <i>gan</i>	let them not put
pon <i>gan</i> VV.	put, your honors	no pon <i>gan</i> VV.	put not, your honors

COMPOUND INFINITIVE; **haber puesto**, to have put.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	he puesto , etc.	I have put, etc.
Comp. Imp.	habia puesto , etc.	I had put, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	habe puesto , etc.	(when) I had put, etc.
Comp. Fut.	habrè puesto , etc.	I shall have put, etc.
Comp. Cond.	habria puesto , etc.	I should have put, etc.

anteponer.
componer.
contraponer.
deponer.

descomponer.
desimponer.
disponer.

entreponer.
exponer.
imponer.

Conjugate in the same manner:

interponer.
oponer.

posponer.
predisponer.
preponer.

reponer.
sobreponeer.
superponer.

suponer.
trasponer.
yuxtaponer.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE; **habiendo puesto**, having put.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya puesto , etc.	that I have or may have put, etc.
Comp. Imp.	hubiera puesto , etc.	that I should have or had put, etc.
Comp. Imp.	hubiese puesto , etc.	that I had or should have put, etc.
Comp. Fut.	hubiere puesto , etc.	that I have or shall have put, etc.
Comp. Cond.	hubiera or hubiese puesto , etc.	that I should have or had put, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, *quier*, when tonic. Past Definite Stem, *quis*. Future Stem, *querr* *189. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **QUERER** = TO WILL, TO BE WILLING, TO WISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **querer**, to wish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **queriendo**, wishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **querido**, wished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

quero I wish (to wish, am wishing)
quieres thou wishest
quiere he wishes
quiere you honor wishes
queremos we wish
queréis ye wish
quieren they wish
quieren your honors wish

Imperfect

quería I was wishing
querías thou wast wishing
quería he was wishing
quería your honor or was wishing
queríamos we were wishing
queríais ye were wishing
querían they were wishing
querían your honors were wishing

Past Definite

quise I wished
quististe thou didst wish
quiso he wished
quiso your honor wished
quisimos we wished
quistéis ye wished
quisieron they wished
quisieron your honors wished

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

quiera that I wish
quieras that thou wish
quiera that he wish
quiera that your honor wish
queramos that we wish
queráis that ye wish
quieran that they wish
quieran that your honors wish

Imperfect (First Form)

quisiera that I should wish
quisieras that thou shouldst wish
quisiera that he should wish
quisiera that your honor should wish
quisiéramos that we should wish
quisierais that ye should wish
quisieran that they should wish
quisieran that your honors should wish

Imperfect (Second Form)

quisiese that I wished
quisieses that thou wished
quisiese that he wished
quisiese that your honor wished
quisiésemos that we wished
quisiéséis that ye wished
quisiesen that they wished
quisiesen that your honors wished

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

quereré I shall wish
querrás thou wilt wish
querá he will wish
querremos your honor will wish
queréis we shall wish
querán they will wish
querán your honor will wish

Conditional (Consequent)

querria I should wish
querrias thou wouldst wish
querria he would wish
querriamos your honor would wish
querriais we should wish
querrian they would wish
querrian your honors would wish

Future

quisiere I wish
quisieres thou wilt wish
quisiere he wish
quisieremos your honor wish
quisieréis we wish
quisieren they wish
quisieren your honors wish

Conditional (Antecedent)

quisiese I should wish
quisieses thou shouldst wish
quisiese he should wish
quisiesemos if your honor should wish
quisieséis we should wish
quisiesen they should wish
quisiesen your honors should wish

quisiera or **quisiese**
quisieras or **quisieses**
quisiera or **quisiese**
quisieramos or **quisiesemos**
quisierais or **quisieséis**
quisieran or **quisiesen**

si
 V.
 VV.

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

or shall wish,
 etc.

or wished,
 etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

no quieras wish (thou) not
no querás wish (ye) not

quiera let me wish
quieras let him wish
quiera V. wish, your honor
quieramos let us wish
quieran let them wish
quieran VV. wish, your honors

no quiera let me not wish
no quieras let him not wish
no quiera V. wish not, your honor
no queramos let us not wish
no quieran let them not wish
no quieran VV. wish not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber querido**, to have wished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he querido**, etc. I have wished, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia querido**, etc. (when) I had wished, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubie querido**, etc. I shall have wished, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré querido**, etc. I should have wished, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera querido**, etc. I should have wished, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo querido**, having wished.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya querido**, etc. that I have or may have wished, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera querido**, etc. that I should have or had wished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese querido**, etc. that I had or should have wished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiere querido**, etc. that I have or shall have wished, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiera or hubiese querido**, etc. that I should have or had wished, etc.

bienquerer (see p. 201).

matquerer (see p. 202).

Conjugate in the same manner:

querer.

Quiere V. beirme?

Querer means 'will', in sense of to be willing, to wish; e. g., Will you read to me? *¿Quiere V. beirme?*
 When 'will' is used to indicate simple futurity, or 'would' is used conditionally, the future and conditional of corresponding verb must be used; e. g., When will you go? *¿Cuándo irá V.?* When would you go, if etc.? *¿Cuándo iría V., si etc.?*
Querer á, to love, to be fond of: *quiero á mi amiga*, I love my friend.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **sep**, when followed by **a** or **o**. Past Definite Stem, **sup**. Future Stem, **sabr** *

190. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SABER = TO KNOW (THINGS)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **saber**, to know.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sabiendo**, knowing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **sabido**, known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

I know (do know, am knowing)
 thou knowest
 he knows
 your honor knows
 we know
 ye know
 they know
 your honors know

sepa
sepas
sepa
sepa
sepamos
sepáis
sepan
 VV. *sepan*

Present

that I know
 that thou know
 that he know
 that your honor know
 that we know
 that ye know
 that they know
 that your honors know

or may know,
 etc.

Imperfect

I was knowing
 thou wast knowing
 he was knowing
 your honor was knowing
 we were knowing
 ye were knowing
 they were knowing
 your honors were knowing

sapiera
sapieras
sapiera
sapiera
sapieramos
sapieráis
sapieran
 VV. *sapieran*

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should know
 that thou shouldst know
 that he should know
 that your honor should know
 that we should know
 that ye should know
 that they should know
 that your honors should know

or knew.

Past Definite

I knew
 thou didst know
 he knew
 your honor knew
 we knew
 ye knew
 they knew
 your honors knew

sufie
sufiste
sufio
sufio
sufimos
sufistéis
sufieron
 VV. *sufieron*

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I knew
 that thou knew
 that he knew
 that your honor knew
 that we knew
 that ye knew
 that they knew
 that your honors knew

or should know,
 etc.

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

† First person singular present indicative is a contraction of **sepo**.

Future

sabré I shall know
sabrás thou wilt know
sabrá he will know
sabrá your honor will know
sabremos we shall know
sabréis they will know
sabran your honors will know
sabran

Conditional (Consequent)

sabría I should know
sabrás thou wouldst know
sabrá he would know
sabrá your honor would know
sabremos we should know
sabréis they would know
sabran your honors would know
sabran

Future

sabiere I know
sabieres thou know
sabiere he know
sabiere your honor know
sabieremos we know
sabieréis ye know
sabieren they know
sabieren your honors know

or shall know,
 etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

sabiera or **sabiese** I should know
sabieras or **sabieses** thou shouldst know
sabiera or **sabiese** he should know
sabiera or **sabiese** your honor should know
sabieramos or **sabierémos** if we should know
sabierais or **sabieréis** they should know
sabieran or **sabiesen** they should know
sabieran or **sabiesen** your honors should know

or knew.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sabe know (thou)
sabed know (ye)
sépa let me know
sépa let him know
sépa know, your honor
sépan let us know
sépan let them know
sépan know, your honors
sépan VV.

no sepas know (thou) not
no sepáis know (ye) not
no sépa let me not know
no sépa let him not know
no sépa know not, your honor
no sepamos let us not know
no sepán let them not know
no sepán know not, your honors
no sepán VV.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sabido**, to have known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Pres. **he sabido**, etc. I have known, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia sabido**, etc. I had known, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo sabido**, etc. (when) I had known, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré sabido**, etc. I shall have known, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría sabido**, etc. I should have known, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sabido**, having known.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Pres. **haya sabido**, etc. that I have or may have known, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera sabido**, etc. that I should have or had known, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubiese sabido**, etc. that I had or should have known, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere sabido**, etc. that I have or shall have known, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese sabido**, etc. that I should have or had known, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:
resaber.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, *teng* when followed by a or o ; *tien* when tonic and followed by e. Past Definite Stem, *tuv*. Future Stem, *tendr* *

191. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB TENER = TO HAVE, TO POSSESS, TO HOLD

INFINITIVE: tener , to have.		PRESENT PARTICIPLE: teniendo , having.		PAST PARTICIPLE: tenido , had.	
INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD			
<i>Present</i>		<i>Present</i>			
tengo	I have (do have, am having)	tenga	that I have		
tiene	thou hast	tengas	that thou have		
tiene	he has	tengas	that he have		
V. tiene	your honor has	tengas	that your honor have		
tencinos	we have	tengamos	that we have		
tencis	ye have	tengais	that ye have		
VV. tienen	your honors have	tengan	that your honors have		or may have, etc.
<i>Imperfect</i>		<i>Imperfect (First Form)</i>			
tenia	I was having	tuviera	that I should have		
tenias	thou wast having	tuvieras	that thou shouldst have		
tenia	he was having	tuviera	that he should have		
V. tenia	your honor was having	tuviera	that your honor should have		or had.
teniamos	we were having	tuviéramos	that we should have		
teniais	they were having	tuvierais	that ye should have		
VV. tenían	your honors were having	tuvieran	that they should have		
		tuvieran	that your honors should have		
<i>Past Definite</i>		<i>Imperfect (Second Form)</i>			
tuve	I had	tuviese	that I had		
tuviste	thou hadst	tuvieses	that thou had		
tuvo	he had	tuviese	that he had		
V. tuve	your honor had	tuviese	that your honor had		
tuvimos	we had	tuviésemos	that we had		
tuvisteis	ye had	tuvieseis	that ye had		
VV. tuvieron	they had	tuviesen	that they had		or should have, etc.
	your honors had	tuviesen	that your honors had		
<i>Future</i>		<i>Future</i>			
tendré	I shall have	tuviere	I have		
tendrás	thou wilt have	tuvieres	thou have		
tendrá	he will have	tuviere	he have		
V. tendrá	your honor will have	tuviere	your honor have		or shall have, etc.
tendremos	we shall have	tuviéremos	we have		
tendréis	ye will have	tuviereis	ye have		
VV. tendrán	they will have	tuvieren	they have		
	your honors will have	tuvieren	your honors have		

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

tendría I should have
tendrias thou wouldst have
tendría he would have
tendría your honor would have
 V. **tendríamos** we should have
tendríais ye would have
tendrían they would have
 VV. **tendrían** your honors would have

Conditional (Antecedent)

tuviera or **tuviese** I should have
tuvieras or **tuvieses** thou shouldst have
tuviera or **tuviese** he should have
 V. **tuviéramos** or **tuviésemos** if your honor should have
tuviérais or **tuviéserais** we should have
tuvieran or **tuviesen** ye should have
 VV. **tuvieran** or **tuviesen** they should have
 your honors should have

had.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

tén have (thou)
tened have (ye)
tenga let me have
tengas let him have
tenga V. have, your honor
tengamos let us have
tengan let them have
tengan VV. have, your honors

no tengas have (thou) not
no tengais have (ye) not
no tenga let me not have
no tengas let him not have
no tengas V. have not, your honor
no tengamos let us not have
no tengan let them not have
no tengan VV. have not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **tiene**, is abbreviated to **tén**.

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber tenido**, to have had.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he tenido**, etc. I have had, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia tenido**, etc. I had had, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hube tenido**, etc. (when) I had had, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré tenido**, etc. I shall have had, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría tenido**, etc. I should have had, etc.

abstenerse. **contener.**
atenerse. **detener.**

Tener means 'have,' in sense of possess; e. g., I have a hat, *tengo un sombrero*; never, *he un sombrero*. **Haber** is simply used as an auxiliary verb. **Tener** is sometimes used in place of **haber** as an auxiliary verb—it then also implies the idea of possession in the compound tenses, and the past participle agrees in gender and number; e. g., *tengo escrita la carta*, I have (possess) the letter written; but, *he escrito la carta*, I have written the letter. **Tener á**, to hold; e. g., *tengo á caballo*, I hold the horse.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo tenido**, having had.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya tenido**, etc. that I have or may have had, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera tenido**, etc. that I should have or had had, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese tenido**, etc. that I had or should have had, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere tenido**, etc. that I have or shall have had, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese tenido**, etc. that I should have or had had, etc.

obtener. **sostener.**
retener.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, *traig* before a or o. Past Definite Stem, *traj* *

192. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB TRAEER = TO BRING

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **traer**, to bring. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **trayendo**, bringing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **traído**, brought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

traigo I bring (do bring, am bringing)
traes thou bringest
trac he brings
 V. **traemos** your honor brings
traéis we bring
traen they bring
 VV. **traen** your honors bring

Imperfect

traía I was bringing
traías thou wast bringing
traía he was bringing
 V. **traíamos** your honor was bringing
traíais we were bringing
traían they were bringing
 VV. **traían** your honors were bringing

Past Definite

traje I brought
trajiste thou didst bring
trajo he brought
 V. **traímos** we brought
trajisteis they brought
 VV. **trajeron** your honors brought

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

traiga that I bring,
traigas that thou bring
traiga that he bring
 V. **traigamos** that your honor bring
traigáis that we bring
traigan that they bring
 VV. **traigan** that your honors bring

Imperfect (First Form)

trajera that I should bring
trajeras that thou shouldst bring
trajera that he should bring
 V. **trajéramos** that your honor should bring *
trajerais that we should bring
trajeran that they should bring
 VV. **trajeran** that your honors should bring

Imperfect (Second Form)

trajese that I brought
trajeses that thou brought
trajese that he brought
 V. **trajésemos** that your honor brought
trajerais that we brought
trajeran that they brought
 VV. **trajeran** that your honors brought

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

traeré I shall bring
traerás thou wilt bring
traerá he will bring
V. traerá your honor will bring
traeremos we shall bring
traeréis ye will bring
traerán they will bring
VV. traerán your honors will bring

Conditional (Consequent)

traería I should bring
traerías thou wouldst bring
traería he would bring
V. traería your honor would bring
traeríamos we should bring
traeríais ye would bring
traerían they would bring
VV. traerían your honors would bring

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

trajere I bring
trajerés thou shouldst bring
trajere he should bring
V. trajere your honor should bring
trajeremos we bring
trajeréis ye bring
trajerén they bring
VV. traerén your honors bring

or shall bring,
 etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

trajese I should bring
trajeses thou shouldst bring
trajese he should bring
V. trajese your honor should bring
trajésemos if we should bring
trajéséis ye should bring
trajésen they should bring
VV. trajésen your honors should bring

or brought.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

trae bring (thou)
traed bring (ye)

no traigas let me not bring
no traigas let him not bring
no traiga bring, your honor
no traiga V. let us not bring
no traigamos let them not bring
no traigan bring, your honors
no traigan VV. let them not bring

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber traído**, to have brought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

he traído, etc. I have brought, etc.
había traído, etc. I had brought, etc.
hubiese traído, etc. (when) I had brought, etc.
habré traído, etc. I shall have brought, etc.
habría traído, etc. I should have brought, etc.

abstraer. **contraer.**
atraer. **desatraer.**

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo traído**, having brought.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya traído, etc. that I have or may have brought, etc.
hubiera traído, etc. that I should have or had brought, etc.
hubiese traído, etc. that I had or should have brought, etc.
hubiere traído, etc. that I have or shall have brought, etc.
hubiera o hubiese traído, etc. that I should have or had brought, etc.

retraer. **sustraer.**
retrotraer.

Conjugate in the same manner:

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **veng** when followed by **a** or **o**; **vien** when tonic and followed by **e**. Past Definite Stem, **vin**. Future Stem, **vendr** *

193. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB VENIR = TO COME

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **venir**, to come. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **veniendo**, coming. PAST PARTICIPLE: **venido**, come.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

vengo I come (do come, am coming)
vienes thou comest
viene he comes
vienen your honor comes
venimos we come
venis ye come
vienen they come
VV. vienen your honors come

Imperfect

venia I was coming
venias thou wast coming
venia he was coming
V. venia your honor was coming
veniamos we were coming
veniais ye were coming
venian they were coming
VV. venian your honors were coming

Past Definite

vine I came
viniste thou didst come
Vino he came
V. vino your honor came
vinimos we came
vinisteis ye came
VV. vinieron your honors came

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

venga that I come
vengas that thou come
venga that he come
V. venga that your honor come
venamos that we come
vengáis that ye come
VV. vengan that your honors come

Imperfect (First Form)

viniera that I should come
vinieras that thou shouldst come
viniera that he should come
V. viniera that your honor should come
viéramos that we should come
viérais that ye should come
VV. vinieran that your honors should come

Imperfect (Second Form)

viniese that I came
vinieses that thou came
viniese that he came
V. viniese that your honor came
viniésemos that we came
vinieseis that ye came
VV. viniesen that your honors came

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

vendrá I shall come
vendrás thou wilt come
vendrá he will come
vendrá your honor will come
vendremos we shall come
vendréis ye will come
vendrán your honors will come

Conditional (Consequent)

vendría I should come
vendrías thou wouldst come
vendría he would come
vendría your honor would come
vendríamos we should come
vendríais ye would come
vendrían your honors would come

Future

viniera I come
vinieras thou comest
viniera he comes
viniera your honor comes
vinieramos we come
vinieréis ye come
vinieran they come
vinieran your honors come

Conditional (Antecedent)

viniese I should come
vinieses thou shouldst come
viniese he should come
viniese your honor should come
viniesemos we should come
vinieséis ye should come
viniesen they should come
viniesen your honors should come

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

or shall come,
 etc.

or came.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

no venga come (thou) not
no vengas come (ye) not
no venga let me not come
no venga let him not come
no venga V. come not, your honor
no vengamos let us not come
no vengán let them not come
no vengán VV. come not, your honors

Imperative second person singular instead of being **vienes** is abbreviated to **ven**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber venido**, to have come.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he venido**, etc. I have come, etc.
Comp. Imp. **haya venido**, etc. I had come, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubiera venido**, etc. (when) I had come, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré venido**, etc. I shall have come, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría venido**, etc. I should have come, etc.

avenir. convenir.
contravenir. desavenir.

desconvenir.
disconvenir.

Conjugate in the same manner:

provenir. revenirse.
reconvenir. sobrevenir.

subvenir.
supervenir.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo venido**, having come.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya venido**, etc. that I have or may have come, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera venido**, etc. that I should have or had come, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese venido**, etc. that I had or should have come, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form) **hubiera venido**, etc. that I have or shall have come, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiera venido**, etc. that I should have or had come, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **asg**, when followed by **a** or **o** *

194. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ASIR = TO GRASP, TO LAY HOLD OF

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **asir**, to grasp.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **asiendo**, grasping.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **asido**, grasped.

INDICATIVE MOOD

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

asro I grasp (do grasp, am grasping)
ases thou graspest
ase he grasps
V. ase your honor grasps
asimos we grasp
asis ye grasp
asen they grasp
VV. asen your honors grasp

Present

that I grasp
 that thou grasp
 that he grasp
 that your honor grasp
 that we grasp
 that ye grasp
 that they grasp
 that your honors grasp

} or may grasp,
 etc.

Imperfect

asia I was grasping
asias thou wast grasping
asia he was grasping
V. asia your honor was grasping
asiamos we were grasping
asials ye were grasping
asian they were grasping
VV. asian your honors were grasping

Imperfect (First Form)

that I should grasp
 that thou shouldst grasp
 that he should grasp
 that your honor should grasp
 that we should grasp
 that ye should grasp
 that they should grasp
 that your honors should grasp

} or grasped,
 etc.

Past Definite

asi I grasped
asiste thou didst grasp
asió he grasped
V. asió your honor grasped
asimos we grasped
asisteis ye grasped
asieron they grasped
VV. asieron your honors grasped

Imperfect (Second Form)

that I grasped
 that thou grasped
 that he grasped
 that your honor grasped
 that we grasped
 that ye grasped
 that they grasped
 that your honors grasped

} or should grasp,
 etc.

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

asiré
asirás
asirá
 V. **asirá**
asiremos
asiréis
asirán
 VV. **asirán**

I shall grasp
 thou wilt grasp
 he will grasp
 your honor will grasp
 we shall grasp
 ye will grasp
 they will grasp
 your honors will grasp

Conditional (Consequent)

asiria
asirias
asiria
 V. **asiria**
asiriamos
asiriais
asirian
 VV. **asirian**

I should grasp
 thou wouldst gra
 he would grasp
 your honor would grasp
 we should grasp
 ye would grasp
 they would grasp
 your honors would grasp

Future

asiere
asiere
asiere
 V. **asiere**
asiremos
asiretis
asieren
 VV. **asieren**

I grasp
 thou grasp
 he grasp
 your honor grasp
 ye grasp
 they grasp
 your honors grasp

si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

if, when, while,
 although, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

asiera or **asiese**
asiera or **asiese**
asiera or **asiese**
 V. **asiera** or **asiese**
asieramos or **asiesemos**
asierais or **asiesais**
asieran or **asiesen**
 VV. **asieran** or **asiesen**

I should grasp
 thou shouldst grasp
 he should grasp
 your honor should grasp
 we should grasp
 ye should grasp
 they should grasp
 your honors should grasp

si

if

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ase
asid
asga
asga
asga V.
asgamos
asgan
 VV. **asgan**

grasp (thou)
 grasp (ye)
 let me grasp
 let him grasp
 grasp, your honor
 let us grasp
 let them grasp
 grasp, your honors

no asgas
no asgais
no asga
no asga V.
no asgamos
no asgan VV.

grasp (thou) not
 grasp (ye) not
 let me not grasp
 let him not grasp
 grasp not, your honor
 let us not grasp
 let them not grasp
 grasp not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber asido**, to have grasped.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he asido**, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia asido**, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubie asido**, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habre asido**, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria asido**, etc.

I have grasped, etc.
 I had grasped, etc.
 (when) I had grasped, etc.
 I shall have grasped, etc.
 I should have grasped, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo asido**, having grasped.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya asido**, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera asido**, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese asido**, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere asido**, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese asido**, etc.

that I have or may have grasped, etc.
 that I should have or had grasped, etc.
 that I had or should have grasped, etc.
 that I have or shall have grasped, etc.
 that I should have or had grasped, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:
desasir.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, caig before a or o *

195. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB CAER = TO FALL, TO TUMBLE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: caer, to fall.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: cayendo, falling.

PAST PARTICIPLE: caído, fallen.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

caigo	I fall (do fall, am falling)
caes	thou fallest
cae	he falls
V. cae	your honor falls
caemos	we fall
caéis	ye fall
caen	they fall
VV. caen	your honors fall

Imperfect

caia	I was falling
caias	thou wast falling
caia	he was falling
V. caia	your honor was falling
caíamos	we were falling
caíais	ye were falling
caían	they were falling
VV. caían	your honors were falling

Past Definite

caí	I fell
caíste	thou didst fall
cayó	he fell
V. cayó	your honor fell
caímos	we fell
caísteis	ye fell
cayeron	they fell
VV. cayeron	your honors fell

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

caiga	that I fall
caigas	that thou fall
caiga	that he fall
V. caiga	that your honor fall
caigamos	that we fall
caigáis	that ye fall
caigan	that they fall
VV. caigan	that your honors fall

Imperfect (First Form)

cayera	that I should fall
cayeras	that thou shouldst fall
cayera	that he should fall
V. cayera	that your honor should fall
cayéramos	that we should fall
cayerais	that ye should fall
cayeran	that they should fall
VV. cayeran	that your honors should fall

Imperfect (Second Form)

cayese	that I fell
cayeses	that thou fell
cayese	that he fell
V. cayese	that your honor fell
cayésemos	that we fell
cayeseis	that ye fell
cayesen	that they fell
VV. cayesen	that your honors fell

* Where the changes occur the letters are printed in italic.

NOTE. — Past Definite stem changes **i** to **y**, in diphthongs **ie**, **io** (see *caer*).

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I shall fall thou wilt fall he will fall your honor will fall we shall fall ye will fall they will fall your honors will fall</p> <p>V.</p> <p>caeré caerás caerá caerá caeremos caeréis caerán</p> <p>VV. caerán</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I fall thou fall he fall your honor fall we fall ye fall they fall your honors fall</p> <p>or shall fall, etc.</p>
---	--

<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>I should fall thou wouldst fall he would fall your honor would fall we should fall ye would fall they would fall your honors would fall</p> <p>V.</p> <p>caeriera caerieras caeriera caeriera caeríamos caerierais caerieran</p> <p>VV. caerieran</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>I should fall thou shouldst fall he should fall your honor should fall we should fall ye should fall they should fall your honors should fall</p> <p>or</p> <p>caeyese caeyeses caeyese caeyese caeyésemos caeyeseis caeyesen</p> <p>VV. caeyesen</p>
---	---

<p><i>si</i></p> <p>caeriera caerieras caeriera caeriera caeríamos caerierais caerieran</p> <p>VV. caerieran</p>	<p>or</p> <p>caeyese caeyeses caeyese caeyese caeyésemos caeyeseis caeyesen</p> <p>VV. caeyesen</p>
--	---

<p><i>si</i></p> <p>caeriera caerieras caeriera caeriera caeríamos caerierais caerieran</p> <p>VV. caerieran</p>	<p>or</p> <p>caeyese caeyeses caeyese caeyese caeyésemos caeyeseis caeyesen</p> <p>VV. caeyesen</p>
--	---

<p>caer caeré caerá caerá caeremos caeréis caerán</p> <p>VV. caerán</p>	<p>fall (thou) fall (ye)</p> <p>let me fall let him fall fall, your honor let us fall let them fall fall, your honors</p> <p>VV. caerán</p>
---	---

<p>caer caeré caerá caerá caeremos caeréis caerán</p> <p>VV. caerán</p>	<p>fall (thou) not fall (ye) not</p> <p>let me not fall let him not fall fall not, your honor let us not fall let them not fall fall not, your honors</p> <p>VV. caerán</p>
---	---

<p>COMP. INFINITIVE: haber caído, to have fallen.</p> <p>INDICATIVE MOOD</p> <p>Comp. Pres. he caído, etc. Comp. Imp. hubiera caído, etc. Comp. Past Def. hubiere caído, etc. Comp. Fut. hubiera caído, etc. Comp. Cond. hubiera caído, etc.</p>	<p>COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: habiendo caído, having fallen.</p> <p>SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD</p> <p>Comp. Pres. haya caído, etc. Comp. Imp. (1st form) hubiera caído, etc. Comp. Imp. (2d form) hubiere caído, etc. Comp. Fut. hubiera caído, etc. Comp. Cond. hubiera caído, etc.</p>
--	---

Conjugate in the same manner:
decaer. recaer.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, First Conjugation

Past Definite Stem, *d*, followed by endings of second or third conjugation, and not the *first conjugation* *

196. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB DAR = TO GIVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **dar**, to give.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **dando**, giving.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **dado**, given.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

<i>doy</i>	I give (do give, am giving)
<i>das</i>	thou givest
<i>da</i>	he gives
<i>da</i>	your honor gives
<i>damos</i>	we give
<i>dais</i>	ye give
<i>dan</i>	they give
<i>dan</i>	your honors give

Imperfect

<i>daba</i>	I was giving
<i>dabas</i>	thou wast giving
<i>daba</i>	he was giving
<i>daba</i>	your honor was giving
<i>dabamos</i>	we were giving
<i>dabais</i>	ye were giving
<i>daban</i>	they were giving
<i>daban</i>	your honors were giving

Past Definite

<i>di</i>	I gave
<i>diste</i>	thou didst give
<i>dió</i>	he gave
<i>dió</i>	your honor gave
<i>dimos</i>	we gave
<i>disteis</i>	ye gave
<i>diéron</i>	they gave
<i>diéron</i>	your honors gave

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

<i>dé</i>	that I give
<i>des</i>	that thou give
<i>dé</i>	that he give
<i>dé</i>	that your honor give
<i>demo</i>	that we give
<i>deis</i>	that ye give
<i>den</i>	that they give
<i>den</i>	that your honors give

Imperfect (First Form)

<i>diera</i>	that I should give
<i>dieras</i>	that thou shouldst give
<i>diera</i>	that he should give
<i>diera</i>	that your honor should give
<i>dieramos</i>	that we should give
<i>dierais</i>	that ye should give
<i>dieran</i>	that they should give
<i>dieran</i>	that your honors should give

Imperfect (Second Form)

<i>diese</i>	that I gave
<i>dieses</i>	that thou gave
<i>diese</i>	that he gave
<i>diese</i>	that your honor gave
<i>diesemos</i>	that we gave
<i>diesais</i>	that ye gave
<i>diesen</i>	that they gave
<i>diesen</i>	that your honors gave

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

daré I shall give
darás thou wilt give
dará he will give
darémos your honor will give
daréis we shall give
darán ye will give
darán your honors will give

Conditional (Consequent)

daría I should give
darías thou wouldst give
daría he would give
daría your honor would give
daríamos we should give
daríais ye would give
darían they would give
darían your honors would give

st. cuando, mien-
 trs. aunque, etc.

diere
diéres
diere
diéremos
diéreis
diéren

Future

I give
 thou give
 he give
 your honor give
 we give
 ye give
 they give
 your honors give

40 shall give, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

diere or **diése** I should give
diéras or **diéses** thou shouldst give
diere or **diése** he should give
diere or **diése** if your honor should give
diéramos or **diésémos** we should give
diérais or **diésérais** ye should give
diéran or **diéséran** they should give
 or VV. **diésen** your honors should give

40 gave

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

da	give (thou)	no des	give (thou) not
dad	give (ye)	no deis	give (ye) not
dé	let me give	no dé	let me not give
dé	let him give	no dé	let him not give
dé V.	give, your honor	no dé V.	give not, your honor
demos	let us give	no demos	let us not give
den	let them give	no den	let them not give
den VV.	give, your honors	no den VV.	give not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber dado**, to have given.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he dado**, etc. I have given, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia dado**, etc. I had given, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubie dado**, etc. (when) I had given, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré dado**, etc. I shall have given, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría dado**, etc. I should have given, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo dado**, having given.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya dado**, etc. that I have or may have given, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera dado**, etc. that I should have or had given, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere dado**, etc. that I had or should have given, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese dado**, etc. that I have or shall have given, etc.
 that I should have or had given, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desdar.

One of four verbs that add **y** to the original **o** of first person singular present indicative; the others being **ser**, **estar** and **ir**.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem very irregular: Present Indicative, *v*; Present Subjunctive, *vay*; Imperfect Indicative, *ib*. Past Definite Stem, *fu**

197. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB IR = TO GO

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: *ir*, to go. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: *yendo*, going. PAST PARTICIPLE: *ido*, gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

<i>vay</i>	I go (to go, am going)
<i>vas</i>	thou goest
<i>va</i>	he goes
<i>va</i>	your honor goes
<i>vamos</i>	we go
<i>vais</i>	ye go
<i>ván</i>	they go
<i>ván</i>	your honors go

Imperfect

<i>iba</i>	I was going
<i>ibas</i>	thou wast going
<i>iba</i>	he was going
<i>iba</i>	your honor was going
<i>vamos</i>	we were going
<i>vais</i>	ye were going
<i>ván</i>	they were going
<i>ván</i>	your honors were going

Past Definitic

<i>fu</i>	I went
<i>fuiste</i>	thou didst go
<i>fué</i>	he went
<i>fué</i>	your honor went
<i>vamos</i>	we went
<i>fuisteis</i>	ye went
<i>fuieron</i>	they went
<i>fuieron</i>	your honors went

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

<i>vaya</i>	that I go
<i>vayas</i>	that thou go
<i>vaya</i>	that he go
<i>vaya</i>	that your honor go
<i>vayamos</i>	that we go
<i>vayais</i>	that ye go
<i>vayan</i>	that they go
<i>vayan</i>	that your honors go

Imperfect (First Form)

<i>fuera</i>	that I should go
<i>fuera</i>	that thou shouldst go
<i>fuera</i>	that he should go
<i>fuera</i>	that your honor should go
<i>fuéramos</i>	that we should go
<i>fuerais</i>	that ye should go
<i>fuieran</i>	that they should go
<i>fuieran</i>	that your honors should go

Imperfect (Second Form)

<i>fuere</i>	that I went
<i>fuere</i>	that thou went
<i>fuere</i>	that he went
<i>fuere</i>	that your honor went
<i>fuésemos</i>	that we went
<i>fuerais</i>	that ye went
<i>fuieran</i>	that they went
<i>fuieran</i>	that your honors went

* Where the irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italic.

<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I shall go thou wilt go he will go your honor will go we shall go ye will go they will go your honors will go</p> <p>V.</p> <p>iré irás irá irás iremos iréis irán irán</p> <p>VV.</p>	<p><i>Future</i></p> <p>I go thou go he go your honor go we go ye go they go your honors go</p> <p>V.</p> <p>fuere fueres fuere fuere fuere fuere fuere fuere</p> <p>VV.</p> <p>fuere fuere fuere fuere fuere fuere fuere fuere</p>	<p>or shall go, etc.</p>
<p><i>Conditional (Consequent)</i></p> <p>I should go thou shouldst go he would go your honor would go we should go ye would go they would go your honors would go</p> <p>V.</p> <p>iría irías iría irías iríamos iríais irían irían</p> <p>VV.</p>	<p><i>Conditional (Antecedent)</i></p> <p>I should go thou shouldst go he should go your honor should go we should go ye should go they should go your honors should go</p> <p>V.</p> <p>fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera</p> <p>VV.</p> <p>fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera fuera</p>	<p>or went.</p>

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

<p><i>ve</i> <i>id</i></p> <p>go (thou) go (ye)</p>	<p>no <i>vayas</i> no <i>vayáis</i></p> <p>let me not go let him not go go, your honor let us not go let them not go go, your honors</p>	<p>no <i>vaya</i> no <i>vaya</i> no <i>vamos</i> no <i>vayan</i></p> <p>let me not go let him not go go, your honor let us not go let them not go go, your honors</p>
---	--	---

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **va**, is **ve**. Imperative first person plural, instead of being **vayamos**, is abbreviated to **vamos**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo ido**, having gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. Comp. Imp. Comp. Past Def. Comp. Fut. Comp. Cond.</p>	<p>he ido, etc. habe ido, etc. hubiere ido, etc. habría ido, etc.</p>	<p>I have gone, etc. (when) I had gone, etc. I should have gone, etc.</p>
--	---	---

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<p>Comp. Pres. Comp. Imp. Comp. Imp. Comp. Fut. Comp. Cond.</p>	<p>haya ido, etc. hubiere ido, etc. hubiere ido, etc. hubiera or hubiese, ido, etc.</p>	<p>that I have or may have gone, etc. that I should have or had gone, etc. that I have or shall have gone, etc. that I should have or had gone, etc.</p>
---	---	--

This verb is one of four that add **y** to the original **o** in the first person singular of the present indicative; the other three being **ser**, **estar** and **dar**. It is also one of three that are irregular in the imperfect indicative the two others being **ver** and **ser**. Note the similarity in the past definite stem with **ser**, to be.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem very irregular: Present Indicative, *v*; Present Subjunctive, *vay*; Imperfect Indicative, *ib*. Past Definite Stem *fu**

198. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB IRSE = TO GO AWAY.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: *irse*, to go away. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: *yéndose*, going away. PAST PARTICIPLE: *ido*, gone away.

INDICATIVE MOOD

	<i>Present</i>		<i>Present</i>
<i>me voy</i>	I go away (do go away, am going away)	<i>me voya</i>	that I go away
<i>te vas</i>	thou goest away	<i>te voyas</i>	that thou go away
<i>se va</i>	he goes away	<i>se voya</i>	that he go away
<i>V. se va</i>	your honor goes away	<i>nos voyamos</i>	that your honor go away
<i>nos vamos</i>	we go away	<i>os voyáis</i>	that ye go away
<i>os vais</i>	they go away	<i>se voyan</i>	that they go away
<i>se van</i>	your honors go away		that your honors go away
<i>VV. se van</i>			

Imperfect

<i>me iba</i>	I was going away	<i>me fuera</i>	that I should go away
<i>te ibas</i>	thou wast going away	<i>te fueras</i>	that thou shouldst go away
<i>se iba</i>	he was going away	<i>se fuera</i>	that he should go away
<i>V. se iba</i>	your honor was going away	<i>nos fuéramos</i>	that your honor should go away
<i>nos íbamos</i>	we were going away	<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye should go away
<i>os ibais</i>	ye were going away	<i>se fueran</i>	that they should go away
<i>se iban</i>	they were going away		that they should go away
<i>VV. se iban</i>	your honors were going away		that your honors should go away

Past Definite

<i>me fui</i>	I went away	<i>me fuese</i>	that I went away
<i>te fuiste</i>	thou didst go away	<i>te fueses</i>	that thou went away
<i>se fue</i>	he went away	<i>se fuese</i>	that he went away
<i>V. se fue</i>	your honor went away	<i>nos fuésemos</i>	that your honor went away
<i>nos fuimos</i>	we went away	<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye went away
<i>os fuisteis</i>	ye went away	<i>se fueron</i>	that they went away
<i>se fueron</i>	they went away		that they went away
<i>VV. se fueron</i>	your honors went away		that your honors went away

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

<i>me vaya</i>	that I should go away	<i>me fuera</i>	that I should go away
<i>te vayas</i>	that thou shouldst go away	<i>te fueras</i>	that thou shouldst go away
<i>se vaya</i>	that he should go away	<i>se fuera</i>	that he should go away
<i>V. se vaya</i>	that your honor should go away	<i>nos fuéramos</i>	that your honor should go away
<i>nos vayamos</i>	that we should go away	<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye should go away
<i>os vayáis</i>	that ye should go away	<i>se fueran</i>	that they should go away
<i>se vayan</i>	that they should go away		that they should go away
<i>VV. se vayan</i>	that your honors should go away		that your honors should go away

Imperfect (First Form)

<i>me fuera</i>	that I should go away	<i>me fuese</i>	that I went away
<i>te fueras</i>	that thou shouldst go away	<i>te fueses</i>	that thou went away
<i>se fuera</i>	that he should go away	<i>se fuese</i>	that he went away
<i>V. se fuera</i>	that your honor should go away	<i>nos fuésemos</i>	that your honor went away
<i>nos fuéramos</i>	that we should go away	<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye went away
<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye should go away	<i>se fueron</i>	that they went away
<i>se fueran</i>	that they should go away		that they went away
<i>VV. se fueran</i>	that your honors should go away		that your honors went away

Imperfect (Second Form)

<i>me fuese</i>	that I went away	<i>me fuera</i>	that I should go away
<i>te fueses</i>	that thou went away	<i>te fueras</i>	that thou shouldst go away
<i>se fuese</i>	that he went away	<i>se fuera</i>	that he should go away
<i>V. se fuese</i>	that your honor went away	<i>nos fuéramos</i>	that your honor should go away
<i>nos fuésemos</i>	that we went away	<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye should go away
<i>os fuerais</i>	that ye went away	<i>se fueran</i>	that they should go away
<i>se fueron</i>	that they went away		that they should go away
<i>VV. se fueron</i>	that your honors went away		that your honors should go away

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

me iré
te irás
se irá
V. se irá
nos iremos
os iréis
se irán
VV. se irán

I shall go away
thou wilt go away
he will go away
your honor will go away
we shall go away
ye will go away
they will go away
your honors will go away

Conditional (Consequent)

me iría
te irías
se iría
V. se iría
nos iríamos
os iríamos
se irían
VV. se irían

I should go away
thou wouldst go away
he would go away
your honor would go away
we should go away
ye would go away
they would go away
your honors would go away

si.
cuando,
men-
tras,
aunque,
etc.

me *fuere*
te *fueres*
se *fuere*
V. se *fuere*
nos *fuéremos*
os *fuereis*
se *fueren*
VV. se *fueren*

Future

I go away
thou go away
he go away
your honor go away
we go away
ye go away
they go away
your honors go away

or shall go
away, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

me *fuere*
te *fueres*
se *fuere*
V. se *fuere*
nos *fuéremos*
os *fuereis*
se *fueren*
VV. se *fueren*

I should go away
thou wouldst go away
he would go away
your honor would go away
we should go away
ye would go away
they would go away
your honors would go away

or went away.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vete
idos
váyame
váyase
váyase V.
vámonos
váyanse
váyanse VV.

go (thou) away
go (ye) away
let me go away
let him go away
go away, your honor
let us go away
let them go away
go away, your honors

no *te vayas*
no *os vayáis*
no *me vaya*
no *se vaya* V.
no *nos vamos*
no *se vayan* VV.

go (thou) not away
go (ye) not away
let me not go away
let him not go away
go not away, your honor
let us not go away
let them not go away
go not away, your honors

Imperative first person plural, instead of being *vayámonos*, is abbreviated to *vámonos*. Imperative second person plural affirmative, see paragraph 2, § 120.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: *haberse ido*, to have gone away.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. me *he ido*, etc. I have gone away, etc.
Comp. Imp. me *habia ido*, etc. I had gone away, etc.
Comp. Past Def. me *hubo ido*, etc. (when) I had gone away, etc.
Comp. Fut. me *habré ido*, etc. I shall have gone away, etc.
Comp. Cond. me *habria ido*, etc. I should have gone away, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: *habiéndose ido*, having gone away.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. me *haya ido*, etc. that I have *or* may have gone away, etc.
Comp. Imp. me *hubiera ido*, etc. that I should have *or* had gone away, etc.
Comp. Past Def. me *hubiese ido*, etc. that I had *or* should have gone away, etc.
Comp. Fut. me *hubiere ido*, etc. that I have *or* shall have gone away, etc.
Comp. Cond. me *hubiera* or me *hubiese ido*, etc. that I should have *or* had gone away, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, oig, before a or o; oy when tonic and followed by e*

199. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB OÍR = TO HEAR

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: oír, to hear.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE: oyendo, hearing.	SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	PAST PARTICIPLE: oído, heard.
INDICATIVE MOOD			
<i>Present</i>			
o.igo o.yes o.ye V. o.ye o.imos o.is o.yen VV. o.yen	I hear (do hear, am hearing) thou hearest he hears your honor hears we hear ye hear they hear your honors hear	o.iga o.igas o.iga V. o.iga o.igamos o.igais o.igan VV. o.igan	that I hear that thou hear that he hear that your honor hear that we hear that ye hear that they hear that your honors hear
<i>Imperfect</i>			
o.ia o.ias o.ia V. o.ia o.iamos o.iais o.ian VV. o.ian	I was hearing thou wast hearing he was hearing your honor was hearing we were hearing ye were hearing they were hearing your honors were hearing	o.yera o.yeras o.yera V. o.yera o.yeramos o.yeráis o.yeran VV. o.yeran	that I should hear that thou shouldst hear that he should hear that your honor should hear that we should hear that ye should hear that they should hear that your honors should hear
<i>Past Definite</i>			
o.í o.íste o.yó V. o.yó o.ímos o.ísteis o.yeron VV. o.yeron	I heard thou didst hear he heard your honor heard we heard ye heard they heard your honors heard	o.yese o.yeses o.yese V. o.yese o.yesemos o.yeseis o.yesen VV. o.yesen	that I heard that thou heard that he heard that your honor heard that we heard that ye heard that they heard that your honors heard

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic. NOTE. — Past Definite stem changes **í** to **y**, in diphthongs **ie, íe**; see *creer*, p. 68.

Future

oiré	I shall hear
oirás	thou wilt hear
oirá	he will hear
V. oirá	your honors will hear
oirémos	we shall hear
oiréis	ye will hear
oirán	they will hear
VV. oirán	your honors will hear

Conditional (Consequent)

oiria	I should hear
oiria;	thou wouldst hear
oiria	he would hear
V. oiria	your honor would hear
oiriamos	we should hear
oiriais	ye would hear
oirían	they would hear
VV. oirian	your honors would hear

Future

oyere	I hear	or shall hear, etc.
oyeres	thou hear	
oyere	he hear	or shall hear, etc.
V. oyere	your honor hear	
oyéremos	we hear	or shall hear, etc.
oyeréis	ye hear	
oyeren	they hear	or shall hear, etc.
VV. oyeren	your honors hear	

Conditional (Antecedent)

oyera	I should hear	or heard.
oyeras	thou shouldst hear	
oyera	he should hear	or heard.
V. oyera	your honor should hear	
oyéramos	we should hear	or heard.
oyerais	ye should hear	
oyeran	they should hear	or heard.
VV. oyeran	your honors should hear	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

oye	hear (thou)	no oigas	hear (thou) not
oid	hear (ye)	no oigais	hear (ye) not
oiga	let me hear	no oiga	let me not hear
oiga	let him hear	no oiga	let him not hear
oiga V.	hear, your honor	no oiga V.	hear not, your honor
oigamos	let us hear	no oigamos	let us not hear
oigan	let them hear	no oigan	let them not hear
oigan VV.	hear, your honors	no oigan VV.	hear not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber oído**, to have heard.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	he oído , etc.
Comp. Imp.	habia oído , etc.
Comp. Past Def.	hubo oído , etc.
Comp. Fut.	habré oído , etc.
Comp. Cond.	habría oído , etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo oído**, having heard.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	haya oído , etc.	that I have or may have heard, etc.
Comp. Imp.	hubiera oído , etc.	that I should have or had heard, etc.
Comp. Imp.	hubiera oído , etc.	that I had or should have heard, etc.
Comp. Fut.	hubiera oído , etc.	that I have or shall have heard, etc.
Comp. Cond.	hubiera oído , etc.	that I should have or had heard, etc.

*Conjugate in the same manner:***desoir.** **entreoir.** **trasoír.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, *salg* before *o* or *a*. Future Stem, *saldr* *

200. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SALIR = TO GO OR COME OUT SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **salir**, to go out. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **saliendo**, going out. PAST PARTICIPLE: **salido**, gone out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

salgo I go out (do go out, am going out)
sales thou goest out
sale he goes out
salimos your honor goes out
salís we go out
salen they go out
salen your honors go out

Imperfect

salía I was going out
salías thou wast going out
salía he was going out
salíamos your honor was going out
salíais we were going out
salían they were going out
salían your honors were going out

Past Definite

sali I went out
saliste thou didst go out
salió he went out
salió your honor went out
salimos we went out
salisteis ye went out
salieron they went out
salieron your honors went out

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

salga that I go out
salgas that thou go out
salga that he go out
salgamos that your honor go out
salgáis that we go out
salgan that they go out
salgan that your honors go out

Imperfect (First Form)

saliera that I should go out
salieras that thou shouldst go out
saliera that he should go out
salieramos that your honor should go out
salierais that we should go out
salieran that they should go out
salieran that your honors should go out

Imperfect (Second Form)

saliese that I went out
salieses that thou went out
saliese that he went out
salieses that your honor went out
salieseis that we went out
saliesen that they went out
saliesen that your honors went out

or used to go out

or may go out, etc.

or went out,

or should go out, etc.

*Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

saliré I shall go out
salirás thou wilt go out
salirá he will go out
salirán your honor will go out
V. saliremos we shall go out
salireis ye will go out
salirán they will go out
VV. salirán your honors will go out

Conditional (Consequent)

saliría I should go out
salirías thou wouldst go out
saliría he would go out
salirían your honor would go out
V. saliriéramos we should go out
saliriéis ye would go out
salirían they would go out
VV. salirían your honors would go out

Future

saliré I go out
salirás thou go out
saliría he go out
salirán your honor go out
V. saliremos we go out
salireis ye go out
salirán they go out
VV. salirán your honors go out

si, cuando, mientras, etc.

or shall go out, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

saliría I should go out
salirías thou shouldst go out
saliría he should go out
salirían your honor should go out
V. saliriéramos we should go out
saliriéis ye should go out
salirían they should go out
VV. salirían your honors should go out

si

or went out, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sal go (thou) out
salid go (ye) out
salga let me go out
salgas let him go out
salga V. go out, your honor
salgamos let us go out
salgan let them go out
salgan VV. go out, your honors

no salgás go (thou) not out
no salgáis go (ye) not out
no salga let me not go out
no salgas let him not go out
no salga V. go not out, your honor
no salgamos let us not go out
no salgan let them not go out
no salgan VV. go not out, your honors

Imperative, second person singular, instead of being **sale** is abbreviated to **sal**.

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber salido**, to have gone out.
 INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he salido**, etc. I have gone out, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia salido**, etc. I had gone out, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo salido**, etc. (when) I had gone out, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré salido**, etc. I shall have gone out, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habria salido**, etc. I should have gone out, etc.

COMPOUND TENSES
 COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo salido**, having gone out.
 SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya salido**, etc. that I have or may have gone out, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera salido**, etc. that I should have or had gone out, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form) **hubiese salido**, etc. that I had or should have gone out, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere salido**, etc. that I have or shall have gone out, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese salido**, etc. that I should have or hubese had gone out, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

resalir. sobresalir.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **valg** before **a** or **o**. Future stem, **valdr***

201. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB VALER = TO BE WORTH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **valer**, to be worth.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **valiendo**, being worth.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **valido**, been worth.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

val-go I am worth
val-es thou art worth
vale he is worth
vale your honor is worth
val-emos we are worth
val-eis ye are worth
val-en they are worth
val-en your honors are worth

Imperfect

val-ia I was worth
val-ias thou wast worth
val-ia he was worth
val-ia your honor was worth
val-iamus we were worth
val-iais ye were worth
val-ian they were worth
val-ian your honors were worth

Past Definite

val-i I was worth
val-iste thou wast worth
val-ió he was worth
val-ió your honor was worth
val-imos we were worth
val-isteis ye were worth
val-ieron they were worth
val-ieron your honors were worth

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

val-ga that I be worth
val-gas that thou be worth
val-ga that he be worth
val-ga that your honor be worth
val-gamos that ye be worth
val-gais that they be worth
val-gan that your honors be worth

Imperfect (First Form)

val-iera that I should be worth
val-ieras that thou shouldst be worth
val-iera that he should be worth
val-iera that your honor should be worth
val-ieramos that ye should be worth
val-ierais that they should be worth
val-ieran that your honors should be worth

Imperfect (Second Form)

val-iese that I were worth
val-ieses that thou were worth
val-iese that he were worth
val-iese that your honor were worth
val-iesemos that ye were worth
val-ieseis that they were worth
val-iesen that your honors were worth

or may be worth,
etc.

or were worth.

or should be worth, etc.

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in *italic*.

Future

val/ré
val/rás
val/rá
val/rá
val/remos
val/réis
val/rán
VV. val/rán

I shall be worth
 thou wilt be worth
 he will be worth
 your honor will be worth
 we shall be worth
 ye will be worth
 they will be worth
 your honors will be worth

Conditional (Consequent)

val/ría
val/rías
val/ría
val/ría
val/ríamos
val/ríais
val/rían
VV. val/rían

I should be worth
 thou wouldst be worth
 he would be worth
 your honor would be worth
 we should be worth
 ye would be worth
 they would be worth
 your honors would be worth

val/ere
val/eres
val/ere
val/ere
val/eremos
val/eréis
val/erán
VV. val/erán

V.
 VV.

si,
 cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.

Future

I be worth
 thou be worth
 he be worth
 your honor be worth
 we be worth
 ye be worth
 they be worth
 your honors be worth

or shall be worth,
 etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

val/iese
val/ieses
val/iese
val/iese
val/iesemos
val/ieséis
val/iesen
VV. val/iesen

or
 or
 or V.
 or
 or
 or
 or VV.

I should be worth
 thou shouldst be worth
 he should be worth
 your honor should be worth
 we should be worth
 ye should be worth
 they should be worth
 your honors should be worth

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vale or **val**
valed
val/ga
val/ga
val/ga V.
val/gamos
val/gan VV.

be (thou) worth
 be (ye) worth
 let me be worth
 let him be worth
 be worth, your honor
 let us be worth
 let them be worth
 be worth, your honors

no val/gas
no val/gais
no val/ga
no val/ga V.
no val/gamos
no val/gan VV.

be (thou) not worth
 be (ye) not worth
 let me not be worth
 let him not be worth
 be not worth, your honor
 let us not be worth
 let them not be worth
 be not worth, your honors

Imperative second person singular affirmative is either the regular form, **vale**, or the abbreviated form, **val**; neither form is used, as a rule, without the pronouns **me**, **te**, **nos**; e. g. **valme** or **valéme**; **valte** or **valéte**; **valnos** or **valénos**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber válido**, to have been worth. COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo válido**, having been worth.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.
Comp. Imp.
Comp. Past Def.
Comp. Fut.
Comp. Cond.

he válido, etc.
había válido, etc.
hubo válido, etc. (when I had been worth, etc.)
habré válido, etc. I shall have been worth, etc.
habría válido, etc. I should have been worth, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.
Comp. Imp.
Comp. Imp.
Comp. Fut.
Comp. Cond.

haya válido, etc. that I have or may have been worth, etc.
hubiera válido, etc. that I should have or had been worth, etc.
hubiese válido, etc. that I had or should have been worth, etc.
hubiere válido, etc. that I have or shall have been worth, etc.
hubiera or hubiese that I should have or had been worth, etc.
válido, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

equivaler.
prevaler.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **ve** before **a, o, i**; otherwise **v ***

202. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB VER = TO SEE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **ver**, to see.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **viendo**, seeing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **visto**, seen.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present

veo I see (do see, am seeing)
ves thou wast seeing
ve he sees
ve your honor sees
vemos we see
veis ye see
ven they see
ven your honor sees

Present

vca that I see
vas that thou see
vca that he see
vca that your honor see
vamos that we see
vais that ye see
van that they see
van that your honors see

Imperfect

veía I was seeing
veías thou wast seeing
veía he was seeing
veía your honor was seeing
veíamos we were seeing
veíais ye were seeing
veían they were seeing
veían your honors were seeing

Imperfect (First Form)

vicra that I should see
vicras that thou shouldst see
vicra that he should see
vicra that your honor should see
vicramos that we should see
vicrais that ye should see
vicran that they should see
vicran that your honors should see

Past Definite

ví I saw
viste thou didst see
vió he saw
vió your honor saw
vimos we saw
vistéis ye saw
vicieron they saw
vicieron your honors saw

Imperfect (Second Form)

vicse that I saw
vicseas that thou saw
vicse that he saw
vicse that your honor saw
vicsemos that we saw
vicseis that ye saw
vicsean that they saw
vicsean that your honors saw

*Where the changes occur the letters are printed in italic. The old form of the verb was **vefer**.

Note the irregular past participle *visto*. This verb is one of three that are irregular in the imperfect indicative; the two others being **ser** and **ir**. The imperfect indicative forms, **via, vias, vía, via,** etc., are met with in poetry.

Future

veré I shall see
verás thou wilt see
verá he will see
V. verá your honor will see
veremos we shall see
veréis ye will see
verán they will see
VV. verán your honors will see

Conditional (Consequent)

vería I should see
verías thou wouldst see
vería he would see
V. vería your honor would see
veríamos we should see
veríais ye would see
verían they would see
VV. verían your honors would see

Future

viere I see
vieres thou see
viere he see
V. viere your honor see
viéramos we see
vieréis ye see
vierén they see
VV. vierén your honors see

Conditional (Antecedent)

vierra or **viere** I should see
vieras or **vieres** thou shouldst see
vierra or **viere** he should see
V. vierra or **V. viere** if your honor should see
viéramos or **viéramos** we should see
vieráis or **vieráis** ye should see
vierían or **vierían** they should see
VV. vierían or **VV. vierían** your honors should see

**si, cuando, mien-
 tras, aunque, etc.**

**or shall see,
 etc.**

**or saw,
 etc.**

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ve see (thou)
ved see (ye) not
Vea let me see
Vea V. let him see
Vamos see, your honor
Van let us see
VV. Vean let them see
VV. Vean see, your honors
no veas see (thou) not
no vedáis see (ye) not
no Vea let me not see
no Vea V. let him not see
no Vamos see not, your honor
no Vean let us not see
no Vean let them not see
no Vean see not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber visto**, to have seen.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he visto**, etc. I have seen, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había visto**, etc. I had seen, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubo visto**, etc. (when) I had seen, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré visto**, etc. I shall have seen, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría visto**, etc. I should have seen, etc.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo visto**, having seen.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya visto**, etc. that I have or may have seen, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera visto**, etc. that I should have or had seen, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hubiese visto**, etc. that I had or should have seen, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere visto**, etc. that I have or shall have seen, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese visto**, etc. that I should have or had seen, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner: antever, prever, rever; and since, in these compounds, ver is the true stem, they must be written, antevero, antevés, antevé, V. antevé, antevemos, antevéis, antevén, VV. antevén; and similarly for the other compounds, because necessary to preserve the tonic accent on the true stem.

IRREGULAR VERBS—Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, *yazc*, *yazg*, *yag*, before *a* or *o**

203. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB YACER = TO REST, TO LIE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: *yacer*, to lie.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: *yacendo*, lying.

PAST PARTICIPLE: *yacido*, lain.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

<i>yaco</i> , <i>yazgo</i> , <i>yago</i>	I lie (do lie, am lying)
<i>yaces</i>	thou liest
<i>yace</i>	he lies
V. <i>yace</i>	your honor lies
<i>yacemos</i>	we lie
<i>yacéis</i>	ye lie
<i>yacen</i>	they lie
VV. <i>yacen</i>	your honors lie

Imperfect

<i>yacia</i>	I was lying
<i>yacias</i>	thou wast lying
<i>yacia</i>	he was lying
V. <i>yacia</i>	your honor was lying
<i>yacíamos</i>	we were lying
<i>yacíais</i>	ye were lying
VV. <i>yacían</i>	they were lying

Past Definite

<i>yaci</i>	I lay
<i>yaciste</i>	thou didst lie
<i>yació</i>	he lay
V. <i>yació</i>	your honor lay
<i>yacimos</i>	we lay
<i>yacísteis</i>	ye lay
<i>yacieron</i>	they lay
VV. <i>yacieron</i>	your honors lay

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

<i>yaga</i>	that I lie
<i>yagas</i>	that thou lie
<i>yaga</i>	that he lie
V. <i>yaga</i>	that your honor lie
<i>yagamos</i>	that we lie
<i>yagáis</i>	that ye lie
<i>yagan</i>	that they lie
VV. <i>yagan</i>	that your honors lie

Imperfect (First Form)

<i>yaciera</i>	that I should lie
<i>yacieras</i>	that thou shouldst lie
<i>yaciera</i>	that he should lie
V. <i>yaciera</i>	that your honor should lie
<i>yacíamos</i>	that we should lie
<i>yacíais</i>	that ye should lie
<i>yacieran</i>	that they should lie
VV. <i>yacieran</i>	that your honors should lie

Imperfect (Second Form)

<i>yaciese</i>	that I lay
<i>yacieses</i>	that thou lay
<i>yaciese</i>	that he lay
V. <i>yaciese</i>	that your honor lay
<i>yacíesemos</i>	that we lay
<i>yacíeiséis</i>	that ye lay
<i>yaciesen</i>	that they lay
VV. <i>yaciesen</i>	that your honors lay

*Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

yaceré I shall lie
yacerás thou wilt lie
yacerá he will lie
yacerá your honor will lie
yaceremos we shall lie
yaceréis ye will lie
yacerán they will lie
yacerán your honors will lie

Conditional (Consequent)

yacería I should lie
yacerías thou wouldst lie
yacería he would lie
yacería your honor would lie
yaceríamos we should lie
yaceríais ye would lie
yacerían they would lie
yacerían your honors would lie

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

Conditional (Antecedent)

yacieres or **yacierse** I should lie
yacieres or **yacierse** thou shouldst lie
yacieres or **yacierse** he should lie
yacieres or **yacierse** your honor should lie
yacieremos or **yaciersemos** if we should lie
yacieréis or **yaciereséis** if ye should lie
yacieresen or **yacieresen** if they should lie
yacieresen or **yvier yacieresen** if your honors should lie

yacieres
yacieres
yacieres
yacieremos
yacieréis
yacierén

yaceré
yacerás
yacerá
yaceremos
yaceréis
yacerán

yaceré
yacerás
yacerá
yaceremos
yaceréis
yacerán

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

si
yacería
yacerías
yacería
yacería
yaceríamos
yaceríais
yacerían
yacerían

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

yace or **yaz** lie (thou)
yaced lie (ye)

yazca, etc. let me lie
yazca, etc. let him lie
yazca V., etc. lie, your honor
yazcamos, etc. let us lie
yazcan, etc. let them lie
yazcan VV., etc. lie, your honors

Imperative second person singular is either **yace** or the abbreviated form **yaz**.

no yazcas, **yazgas**, **yagas** lie (thou) not
no yazcáis, **yazgáis**, **yagáis** lie (ye) not

no yazca, etc. let me not lie
no yazca, etc. let him not lie
no yazca V., etc. lie not, your honor
no yazcamos, etc. let us not lie
no yazcan, etc. let them not lie
no yazcan VV., etc. lie not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber yacido**, to have lain.
 INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he yacido**, etc. I have lain, etc.
Comp. Imp. **había yacido**, etc. I had lain, etc.
Comp. P. est Def. **hubé yacido**, etc. (when) I had lain, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré yacido**, etc. I shall have lain, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría yacido**, etc. I should have lain, etc.

Yacer, to lie, is now rarely used except in epithets, for which only the third persons singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative are required: **aqui yace** or **yacen**, here lies; **aqui yacia** or **yacían**, here lay.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo yacido**, having lain.
 SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya yacido**, etc. that I have *or* may have lain, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera yacido**, etc. that I should have *or* had lain, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese yacido**, etc. that I had *or* should have lain, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiere yacido**, etc. that I have *or* shall have lain, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera** or **hubiese yacido**, etc. that I should have *or* had lain, etc.

Future

yaciere I lie
yaciere thou lie
yaciere he lie
yaciere your honor lie
yaciéremos we lie
yaciéreis ye lie
yacieren they lie
yacieren your honors lie

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

V.
yaciere
yaciere
yaciere
yaciéremos
yaciéreis
yacieren

VV.
yacieren

DEFECTIVE VERBS

205. Defective verbs are those which are wanting in some of the persons or tenses. This defect may be due to various reasons, principally, however, to the fact that their meaning forbids their use in certain tenses or persons, or that their structure renders their conjugation difficult or harsh to the Spanish ear.

1. Where defective on account of form, a verb in one language will not be found to be correspondingly defective in another; and in the same language usually other verbs will be found to supply the missing parts. Thus *can* and *must* are defective in English, but not in French and Spanish, where the corresponding verbs are *pouvoir* and *devoir* in French, and *poder* and *deber* in Spanish; and in English, to supply the missing parts of *can*, we employ "to be able," and for the missing parts of *must* we use "to be obliged to." So in Spanish *garantir* will be found defective and the missing parts supplied by *garantizar*. (See p. 197.) Sometimes verbs are defective through an inexplicable regard for euphony; *loo* and *roo* (from *loar* and *roer*) are avoided, but there is no hesitation about using the nouns *moho*, *azamboo*.

2. When defective on account of meaning, a verb will invariably be found correspondingly defective in all languages; for, if one cannot say, ordinarily, "I am born," "I graze," "I bark," etc., in English, neither is it possible in French or Spanish; and as it may be possible in narration in English to say "I am born," or in fables, "I graze," "I bark," so it is possible in other languages.

Impersonal verbs are not considered defective, because their literal meaning prevents their employment other than in the third person singular.

There are ten verbs of the third conjugation that are used only in the future indicative, or when the inflectional endings consist of or begin with *i*. The conjugation of one of them, *abolir*, will serve as a model for the other nine.

206. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ABOLIR*** = TO ABOLISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **abolir**, to abolish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **aboliendo**, abolishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **abolido**, abolished.
 INDICATIVE MOOD SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

abolimos
abolis
 we abolish
 ye abolish

Imperfect

abolía
abolías
abolía
V. abolía
abolíamos
abolíais
abolían
VV. abolían
 I was abolishing
 thou wast abolishing
 he was abolishing
 your honor was abolishing
 we were abolishing
 ye were abolishing
 they were abolishing
 your honors were abolishing

or used to abolish.

Past Definite

abolí
aboliste
abolíó
V. abolíó
abolimos
abolistéis
abolieron
VV. abolieron
 I abolished
 thou didst abolish
 he abolished
 your honor abolished
 we abolished
 ye abolished
 they abolished
 your honors abolished

Future

aboliré
abolirás
abolirá
V. abolirá
aboliremos
aboliréis
abolirán
VV. abolirán
 I shall abolish
 thou wilt abolish
 he will abolish
 your honor will abolish
 we shall abolish
 ye will abolish
 they will abolish
 your honors will abolish

Imperfect (First Form)

aboliera
abolieras
aboliera
V. aboliera
abolieramos
abolierais
abolieran
VV. abolieran
 that I should abolish
 that thou shouldst abolish
 that he should abolish
 that your honor should abolish
 that we should abolish
 that ye should abolish
 that they should abolish
 that your honors should abolish

or abolished.

Imperfect (Second Form)

aboliese
abolieses
aboliese
V. aboliese
aboliesemos
abolieséis
aboliesen
VV. aboliesen
 that I abolished
 that thou abolished
 that he abolished
 that your honor abolished
 that we abolished
 that ye abolished
 that they abolished
 that your honors abolished

or should abolish,
etc.

Future

aboliere
abolieres
aboliere
V. aboliere
abolieremos
abolieréis
abolieren
VV. abolieren
 I abolish
 thou abolish
 he abolish
 your honor abolish
 we abolish
 ye abolish
 they abolish
 your honors abolish

si, cuando, mientras,
si, cuando, etc.

or shall abolish, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

aboliría I should abolish
abolirías thou wouldst abolish
aboliría he would abolish
abolirías your honor would abolish
aboliríamos we should abolish
aboliríais ye would abolish
abolirían they would abolish
abolirían your honors would abolish

Conditional (Antecedent)

aboliera or **aboliese** I should abolish
abolieras or **abolieses** thou shouldst abolish
aboliera or **aboliese** he should abolish
abolieras or **abolieses** your honor should abolish
aboliríamos or **aboliríamos** if we should abolish
aboliríais or **aboliríais** ye should abolish
abolirían or **abolirían** they should abolish
abolirían or **abolirían** your honors should abolish

or abolished.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

abolid abolish (ye) **no abolid** abolish (ye) not

* The only forms in use are the future and those in which the inflectional endings begin with **l**, as shown above.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber abolido**, to have abolished.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo abolido**, having abolished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **he abolido**, etc. I have abolished, etc.
Comp. Imp. **habia abolido**, etc. I had abolished, etc.
Comp. Past Def. **hube abolido**, etc. (when) I had abolished, etc.
Comp. Fut. **habré abolido**, etc. I shall have abolished, etc.
Comp. Cond. **habría abolido**, etc. I should have abolished, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres. **haya abolido**, etc. that I have or may have abolished, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiera abolido**, etc. that I should have or had abolished, etc.
Comp. Imp. **hubiese abolido**, etc. that I had or should have abolished, etc.
Comp. Fut. **hubiera abolido**, etc. that I have or shall have abolished, etc.
Comp. Cond. **hubiera or hubiese abolido**, etc. that I should have or had abolished, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aguerir (like *servir*). **desmarrire** (regular). **empedernir** (like *servir*); **empedernecer** supplies missing forms.
arrecirse (like *servir*). **despavorir** (regular). **garantir** (regular); **garantizar** supplies missing forms.
aterirse (like *servir*). **embair** (regular). **manir** (regular).

Aplacer, to please, is seldom used, except in the infinitive and in the third person singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative :

Present indicative, *aplace, aplacen.*
 Imperfect indicative, *aplacia, aplacian.*

Proverb : *Todo lo nuevo aplice.*

Atañer, to appertain, on account of its meaning can be employed only in the third persons. It is used principally in the infinitive and in the third person singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative :

Present indicative, *atañe, atañen.*
 Imperfect indicative, *atañia, atañian.*

Balbuir, to stammer, is not used in the persons and numbers where the irregular verbs of the fourth class take *z* before *c* ; viz., when *c* is followed by *a* or *o* (see 159). This verb is, however, used more ordinarily with the termination *ear* — *balbucear*.

Concernir, to concern, on account of its meaning can be employed only in the present participle and in the third persons. It is seldom used, except as follows :

Present indicative, *concierne, conciernen.*
 Present subjunctive, *concierna, conciernan.*
 Imperfect indicative, *concernia, concernian.*

Corroer, to corrode, has,

Present indicative, *corroe, corroen.*
 Present subjunctive, *corroa, corroan.*

Nacer, to be born, on account of its meaning can hardly be used in the first person singular present indicative, nor in the second person singular of the imperative. Still, Álvarez de Cienfuegos writes : “*Rosas, naced,*” and the Spanish Academy says this is an expression that could just as well have been used in the singular.

Pacer, to graze, is not used in the persons and numbers where irregular verbs of the fourth class take *z* before *c* ; viz., when *c* is followed by *a* or *o* (see § 159).

Placer, to please (impersonal verb), is seldom used except in exclamations, e. g., *¡plague á Dios, God Grant ; ¡pluguiera á Dios, would to God !* Otherwise its place is usually taken by *querer, gustar, parecer*, to please. It is conjugated as follows, preference being given to the stem *plug* :

Placer, *placiendo,* *placido.*

Indicative Mood

Present, *place.*
 Imperfect, *placia.*
 Past definite, *plugo (plació).*
 Future, *placeré.*
 Conditional, *placiera.*

Subjunctive Mood

Present, *plegue (plazca).*
 Imp., 1st form, *pluguiera (placiera).*
 Imp., 2d form, *pluguiese (placiese).*
 Future, *pluguiera (placiere).*
 Cond. *pluguiera* or *pluguiese (placiera* or *placiese).*

Imperative Mood

Plegue (plega)

The compounds of *placer*: *complacer*, to humor; *desplacer*, to displease, both active verbs, are conjugated throughout like the irregular verbs of the fourth class (see § 159).

Raer, to erase, is seldom used, its place being usually taken by *borrar* or *rayar*. *Raer* has the two stems *raig-* or *ray-* before a strong vowel; *raig-* is preferable. *Raer*, when it occurs, should therefore be conjugated like the irregular verb *caer*, p. 176.

Reponer, when meaning 'to reply,' is, with rare exceptions, used only in the past definite of the indicative.

Repuse, I replied.

Repusiste, thou didst reply.

Repuso, he replied.

V. *Repuso*, your honor replied.

Repusimos, we replied.

Repusisteis, ye replied.

Repusieron, they replied.

VV. *Repusieron*, your honors replied.

Roer, to gnaw, has the following forms, of which *roo*, *roa* are preferable:

Present Indicative

Present Subjunctive

Roo	}			
Roigo,		roa	roiga	roya
Royo				
roes		roas	roigas	royas
roe		roa	roiga	roya
V. roe		V. roa	V. roiga	V. roya
roemos		roamos	roigamos	royamos
roéis		roáis	roigáis	royáis
roen		roan	roigan	royan
VV. roen		VV. roan	VV. roigan	VV. royan

Soler, to be accustomed to, is used principally in the present and imperfect indicative; and also sometimes in the present subjunctive.

<i>Present Indicative</i>	<i>Imperfect Indicative</i>	<i>Present Subjunctive</i>
<i>suelo</i>	<i>solía</i>	<i>suela</i>
<i>sueles</i>	<i>solías</i>	<i>suelas</i>
<i>suele</i>	<i>solia</i>	<i>suela</i>
V. <i>suele</i>	V. <i>solía</i>	V. <i>suela</i>
<i>solemos</i>	<i>solíamos</i>	<i>solamos</i>
<i>soléis</i>	<i>soláis</i>	<i>soláis</i>
<i>suelen</i>	<i>solían</i>	<i>suelan</i>
VV. <i>suelen</i>	VV. <i>solían</i>	VV. <i>suelan</i>

Usucapir, to acquire by right of possession, is used only in the infinitive.

IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES

207. 1. Past participles that do not end in *ado* or *ido* are irregular.

2. The following regular verbs and their compounds have irregular past participles:

<i>Abrir</i> , to open	<i>abierto</i>
<i>Cubrir</i> , to cover	<i>cubierto</i>
<i>Escribir</i> ,* to write	<i>escrito</i>
<i>Imprimir</i> , to print	<i>impreso</i>

3. The following irregular verbs and their compounds have irregular past participles:

<i>Decir</i> , to tell, to say	<i>dicho</i> (<i>bendecir</i> , <i>maldecir</i> , regular)
<i>Hacer</i> , to do, to make	<i>hecho</i>
<i>Morir</i> , to die	<i>muerto</i>
<i>Poner</i> , to put, to place	<i>puesto</i>
<i>Solver</i> , to loosen	<i>suelto</i>
<i>Ver</i> , to see	<i>visto</i>
<i>Volver</i> , to return	<i>vuelto</i>

4. There are a number of verbs that have two past participles, one regular, the other irregular. The regular participle is always used to form the compound tenses, except in the verbs *fréir*, *prender*, *proveer*, *romper*, whose irregular

* *Inscribir* and *proscribir* also have *inscripto* and *proscripto*.

past participles, *frito*, *preso*, *provisto* and *roto*, may be used interchangeably with the regular forms to make the compound tenses; so that *ha frêido* and *ha frito* are equally correct.

5. With the exception of the four above-mentioned verbs, the irregular past participles are used only as adjectives:

agua bendita; *está bendita*; but *ha sido bendecido*.

Verbs.	Regular Past Partic.	Irreg Past Partic.
Abstraer, <i>to abstract</i>	abstraído	abstracto
Afligir, <i>to afflict</i>	afligido	aflicto
Ahitar, <i>to surfeit</i>	ahitado	ahito
Atender, <i>to heed</i>	atendido	atento
Bendecir, <i>to bless</i>	bendecido	bendito
Bienquerer, <i>to esteem</i>	bienquerido	bienquisto
Circuncidar, <i>to circumcise</i>	circuncidado	circunciso
Compeler, <i>to compel</i>	compelido	compulso
Comprender, <i>to comprehend</i>	comprendido	compenso
Comprimir, <i>to compress</i>	comprimido	compreso
Concluir, <i>to conclude</i>	concluido	concluso
Confesar, <i>to confess</i>	confesado	confeso
Confundir, <i>to confuse</i>	confundido	confuso
Consumir, <i>to consume</i>	consumido	consunto
Contundir, <i>to contuse</i>	contundido	contuso
Convencer, <i>to convince</i>	convencido	convicto
Convertir, <i>to convert</i>	convertido	converso
Corregir, <i>to correct</i>	corregido	correcto
Corromper, <i>to corrupt</i>	corrompido	corrupto
Despertar, <i>to awake</i>	despertado	despierto
Difundir, <i>to diffuse</i>	difundido	difuso
Dividir, <i>to divide</i>	dividido	diviso
Elegir, <i>to elect</i>	elegido	electo
Enjugar, <i>to wipe</i>	enjugado	enjuto
Excluir, <i>to exclude</i>	excluido	excluso
Eximir, <i>to exempt</i>	eximido	exento
Expeler, <i>to expel</i>	expelido	expulso
Expresar, <i>to express</i>	expresado	expreso
Extender, <i>to extend</i>	extendido	extenso
Extinguir, <i>to extinguish</i>	extinguido	extinto
Fijar, <i>to fix</i>	fijado	fijo

Verbs.	Regular Past Partic.	Irreg. Past Partic
Freír, <i>to fry</i>	freído	frito
Hartar, <i>to satiate</i>	hartado	harto
Incluir, <i>to include</i>	incluido	incluso
Incurrir, <i>to incur</i>	incurrido	incurso
Infundir, <i>to infuse</i>	infundido	infuso
Ingerir, <i>to ingraft</i>	ingerido	ingerto
Injertar, <i>to ingraft</i>	injertado	injerto
Insertar, <i>to insert</i>	insertado	inserto
Invertir, <i>to invert</i>	invertido	inverso
Juntar, <i>to join</i>	juntado	junto
Maldecir, <i>to curse</i>	maldecido	maldito
Manifestar, <i>to manifest</i>	manifestado	manifiesto
Marchitar, <i>to fade</i>	marchitado	marchito
Malquerer, <i>to abhor</i>	malquerido	malquisto
Nacer, <i>to be born</i>	nacido	nato
Omitir, <i>to omit</i>	omitido	omiso
Oprimir, <i>to oppress</i>	oprimido	opreso
Pasar, <i>to pass</i>	pasado	paso
Poseer, <i>to possess</i>	poseído	poseso
Prender, <i>to take</i>	prendido	preso
Presumir, <i>to presume</i>	presumido	presunto
Pretender, <i>to claim</i>	pretendido	pretenso
Propender, <i>to incline</i>	propendido	propenso
Proveer, <i>to provide</i>	proveído	provisto
Recluir, <i>to seclude</i>	recluido	recluso
Romper, <i>to break</i>	rompido	roto
Salpresar, <i>to season</i>	salpresado	salpreso
Salvar, <i>to save</i>	salvado	salvo
Sepultar, <i>to bury</i>	sepultado	sepulto
Soltar, <i>to loosen</i>	soltado	suelto
Sujetar, <i>to subdue</i>	sujetado	sujeto
Suprimir, <i>to suppress</i>	suprimido	supreso
Suspender, <i>to suspend</i>	suspendido	suspenso
Sustituir, <i>to substitute</i>	sustituido	sustituto
Teñir, <i>to tinge</i>	teñido	tinto
Torcer, <i>to twist</i>	torcido	tuerto

INDEX

The figures indicate the page of the text.

A

Abastecer, 142.
Abnegar, 110.
Abogar, 45.
Abolir, 196.
Aborrecer, 142.
Abrazarse, 91.
Abrir, 200.
Absolver, 121.
Absonar, 111.
Abstenerse, 87, 169.
Absterger, 55.
Abstraer, 171, 201.
Abuñolar, 111.
Acaecer, 98, 142.
Acertar, 110.
Aclocar, 111.
Acoger, 55.
Acollar, 111.
Acontecer, 98, 142.
Acordar, 111.
Acornar, 111.
Acostar, 111.
Acrecentar, 110.
Acrecer, 142.
Adecentar, 110.
Adestrar, 110.
Adherir, 129.
Adolecer, 142.
Adormecer, 142.
Adormir, 135.
Adquirir, 132.
Aducir, 157.
Advertir, 129.
Afligir, 57, 201.
Afollar, 111.
Aforar, 111.
Agorar, 111.
Agradecer, 142.
Aguar, 47.
Aguerrir, 19.
Ahitar, 201.
Ahogar, 45.
Alborear, 98.
Alcanzar, 49.
Alebrarse, 110.
Alegrarse, 86, 88, 89.
Alientar, 110.

Aliquebrar, 110.
Almorzar, 111.
Alongar, 111.
Amanecer, 98, 103, 142.
Amoblar, 111.
Amolar, 111.
Amollecer, 142.
Amorecer, 142.
Amortecerse, 142.
Amortiguar, 47.
Amover, 121.
Andar, 107, 150.
Anochecer, 98, 103, 142.
Antecoger, 55.
Antedecir, 155.
Anteponer, 163.
Antever, 191.
Antiguar, 47.
Apacentar, 110.
Apaciguar, 47.
Aparecer, 142.
Apernar, 110.
Apercollar, 111.
Apetecer, 142.
Aplacer, 198.
Aplicar, 43.
Apostar, 111.
Apretar, 110.
-ar, 14, 22, 24.
Aprobar, 111.
Argüir, 69, 107, 148.
Arrecirse, 197.
Arrendar, 110.
Arrepentirse, 87, 129.
Ascender, 119.
Asentar, 110.
Asentir, 129.
Aserrar, 110.
Asir, 107, 174.
Asolar, 111.
Asoldar, 111.
Asonar, 111.
Asosegar, 110.
Atañer, 67, 198.
Atender, 119, 201.
Atenerse, 169.
Atentar, 110.
Aterirse, 197.
Aterrar, 110.

Atestar, 110.
Atestiguar, 47.
Atraer, 171.
Atravesar, 110.
Atribuir, 69, 107, 146.
Atronar, 111.
Avalentar, 110.
Avanecerse, 142.
Avenir, 173.
Aventar, 110.
Avergonzar, 165, 201.
Averiguar, 46.
Azolar, 111.

B

Balbuçir, 198.
Bastar, 98.
Bendecir, 155, 201.
Bienquerer, 165, 201.
Blanquecer, 142.
Bregar, 110.
Bruñir, 64.
Bullir, 63.

C

Caber, 107, 152.
Caer, 107, 176.
Calentar, 110.
Calzar, 49.
Cambiar, 71, note.
Canecer, 142.
-car, 40, 42.
Carecer, 142.
Cargar, 45.
Cegar, 110.
Ceñir, 137.
-cer, 41.
Cerner, 119, 127.
Cerrar, 110.
Cimentar, 110.
-cir, 41, 52.
Circuir, 147.
Circuncidar, 201.
Clarecer, 142.
Clocar, 111.
Cocer, 124, 141.
Coger, 54.

Colar, 111.
 Colegir, 57, 137.
 Colgar, 111.
 Comedir, 137.
 Comentar, 110.
 Comenzar, 110.
 Comer, 36.
 Compadecer, 142.
 Comparecer, 142.
 Compeler, 201.
 Compensar, 109.
 Competir, 137.
 Complacer, 142.
 Componer, 163.
 Comprender, 201.
 Comprimir, 201.
 Comprobar, 111.
 Concebir, 137.
 Concerner, 127.
 Concernir, 127, 198.
 Concertar, 110.
 Concluir, 147, 201.
 Concordar, 111.
 Condescender, 119.
 Condistinguir, 61.
 Condolerse, 121.
 Conducir, 157.
 Conferir, 129.
 Confesar, 110, 201.
 Confiar, 71.
 Confluir, 147.
 Confundir, 201.
 Conmover, 121.
 Conocer, 106, 140.
 Conseguir, 137.
 Consentir, 129.
 Consolar, 111.
 Consonar, 111.
 Constar, 98.
 Constituir, 147.
 Constreñir, 137.
 Construir, 147.
 Consumir, 201.
 Contar, 111.
 Contener, 169.
 Contentar, 110.
 Contenter, 119.
 Continuar, 70.
 Contorsecerse, 121.
 Contracordar, 111.
 Contradecir, 155.
 Contraer, 171.
 Contrahacer, 159.
 Contraponer, 163.
 Contravenir, 173.
 Contribuir, 147.
 Controvertir, 129.
 Contundir, 201.
 Convalecer, 142.

Convencer, 201.
 Convenir, 98, 173.
 Convertir, 129, 201.
 Corregir, 57, 137, 201.
 Corroer, 198.
 Corromper, 201.
 Costar, 111.
 Crecer, 142.
 Creer, 68.
 Criar, 71.
 Cubrir, 200.

D

Dar, 107, 178.
 Decaer, 177.
 Decentar, 110.
 Decir, 107, 141, 154, 200.
 Decrecer, 142.
 Dedicar, 43.
 Deducir, 157.
 Defenecer, 142.
 Defender, 119.
 Deferir, 129.
 Degollar, 111.
 Delinquir, 58.
 Dementar, 110.
 Demoler, 121.
 Demostrar, 111.
 Denegar, 110.
 Denegrecer, 142.
 Denostar, 111.
 Dentar, 110.
 Deponer, 163.
 Derrenegar, 110.
 Derrengar, 110.
 Derretir, 137.
 Derrocar, 111.
 Derruir, 147.
 Desabastecer, 142.
 Desacertar, 110.
 Desacollar, 111.
 Desacordar, 111.
 Desadornecer, 142.
 Desadvertir, 129.
 Desaferrar, 110.
 Desaforar, 111.
 Desagradecer, 142.
 Desalentar, 110.
 Desamoblar, 111.
 Desandar, 151.
 Desaparecer, 142.
 Desapretar, 110.
 Desaprobar, 111.
 Desarrendar, 110.
 Desasentar, 110.
 Desasir, 175.
 Desasosegar, 110.
 Desatender, 119.

Desatentar, 110.
 Desaterrar, 110.
 Desatraer, 171.
 Desatravesar, 110.
 Desavenir, 173.
 Desaventar, 110.
 Desbastecer, 142.
 Desbravecer, 142.
 Descabezar, 49.
 Descaccer, 142.
 Descender, 119.
 Desceñir, 137.
 Descolgar, 111.
 Descollar, 111.
 Descomedirse, 137.
 Descomponer, 163.
 Desconcertar, 110.
 Desconocer, 142.
 Desconsentir, 129.
 Desconsolar, 111.
 Descontar, 111.
 Descovenir, 173.
 Descordar, 111.
 Descornar, 111.
 Descrecer, 142.
 Desdar, 179.
 Desdecir, 155.
 Desdentar, 110.
 Desembebecerse, 142.
 Desembellecer, 142.
 Desembracecer, 142.
 Desempedrar, 110.
 Desempobrecer, 142.
 Desencarecer, 142.
 Desencerrar, 110.
 Desencordar, 111.
 Desencrudecer, 142.
 Desencruelecer, 142.
 Desenfurecerse, 142.
 Desengrosar, 111.
 Desenmohecer, 142.
 Desenmudecer, 142.
 Desensoberbecer, 142.
 Desentenderse, 119.
 Desenterrar, 110.
 Desentorpecer, 142.
 Desentristecer, 142.
 Desentumecer, 142.
 Desenvolver, 121.
 Deservir, 137.
 Desfallecer, 142.
 Desfavorecer, 142.
 Desferrar, 110.
 Desflaquecerse, 142.
 Desflocar, 111.
 Desflorecer, 142.
 Desfortalecer, 142.
 Desgobernar, 110.
 Desguarnecer, 142.

Deshacer, 159.
 Deshelar, 98, 110.
 Desherbar, 110.
 Desherrar, 110.
 Deshombrecerse, 142.
 Deshumedecer, 142.
 Desimponer, 163.
 Desinventar, 110.
 Desleír, 139.
 Deslendar, 110.
 Deslucir, 145.
 Desmajolar, 111.
 Desmarrarse, 197.
 Desmedirse, 137.
 Desmelar, 110.
 Desmembrar, 110.
 Desmenguár, 47.
 Desmentir, 129.
 Desmerecer, 142.
 Desmullir, 63.
 Desnegar, 110.
 Desnevar, 110.
 Desobedecer, 142.
 Desobstruir, 147.
 Desoír, 185.
 Desolar, 111.
 Desoldar, 111.
 Desollar, 111.
 Desosar, 111, 123.
 Desovar, 111, 123.
 Desparecer, 142.
 Despavorir, 197.
 Despedir, 137.
 Despedrar, 110.
 Desperecer, 142.
 Despernar, 110.
 Despertar, 110, 201.
 Despezar, 110.
 Desplacar, 142.
 Desplegar, 110.
 Despoblar, 111.
 Desproveer, 69.
 Destentar, 110.
 Desteñir, 137.
 Desterrar, 110.
 Destituir, 147.
 Destorcer, 51, 121.
 Destrizar, 49.
 Destrocar, 111.
 Destruir, 147.
 Desuncir, 53.
 Desvanecer, 142.
 Desventar, 110.
 Desverdecir, 142.
 Desvergonzarse, 111.
 Desvolver, 121.
 Detener, 169.
 Detentar, 110.
 Detraer, 171.

Devolver, 121.
 Dezmar, 110.
 Diferir, 129.
 Difluir, 147.
 Difundir, 201.
 Digerir, 129.
 Diluir, 147.
 Dirigir, 56.
 Discerner, 119, 127.
 Discernir, 126.
 Disconvenir, 173.
 Discordar, 111.
 Disentir, 129.
 Disminuir, 147.
 Disolver, 121.
 Disonar, 111.
 Dispertar, 110.
 Displacer, 142.
 Disponer, 163.
 Distender, 119.
 Distinguir, 60.
 Distraer, 171.
 Distribuir, 147.
 Divertir, 129.
 Dividir, 201.
 Dolar, 111.
 Doler, 121.
 Dormir, 135.
 Ducir, 157.

E

Educir, 157.
 -eer, 41, 68.
 Efectuar, 71.
 Elegir, 57, 137, 201.
 Embair, 197.
 Embarbecer, 142.
 Embarcar, 43.
 Embastecer, 142.
 Embebecer, 142.
 Embellecer, 142.
 Embermejecer, 142.
 Embestir, 137.
 Emblandecer, 142.
 Emblanquecer, 142.
 Embobecer, 142.
 Embosquecer, 142.
 Embravecer, 142.
 Embrutecer, 142.
 Emparentar, 110.
 Empecer, 141.
 Empedernir, 197.
 Empedrar, 110.
 Empellar, 110.
 Empequeñecer, 142.
 Empezar, 110.
 Emplastecer, 142.
 Emplumecer, 142.
 Empobrecer, 142.
 Empodrecer, 142.
 Empoltronecerse, 142.
 Emporcar, 111.
 Enaltecer, 142.
 Enardecer, 142.
 Encabellecerse, 142.
 Encalvecer, 142.
 Encallecer, 142.
 Encandecer, 142.
 Encanecer, 142.
 Encarecer, 142.
 Encarnecer, 142.
 Encender, 119.
 Encentar, 110.
 Encerrar, 110.
 Enclocar, 111.
 Encloquecer, 142.
 Encomendar, 110.
 Encontrar, 111.
 Encorar, 111.
 Encordar, 111.
 Encorecer, 142.
 Encornar, 111.
 Encovar, 111.
 Encrudecir, 142.
 Encruelecer, 142.
 Encubertar, 110.
 Endentar, 110.
 Endentecer, 142.
 Endurecer, 142.
 Enfierecerse, 142.
 Enflaquecer, 142.
 Enfranquecer, 142.
 Enfurecer, 142.
 Engorar, 111.
 Engrandecer, 142.
 Engréir, 139.
 Engrosar, 111.
 Engrumecerse, 142.
 Engullir, 63.
 Enhambrecer, 142.
 Enhambrentar, 110.
 Enhestar, 110.
 Enjugar, 201.
 Enlazar, 49.
 Enlénzar, 110.
 Enloquecer, 142.
 Enlucir, 145.
 Enllentecer, 142.
 Enmagrecer, 142.
 Enmalecer, 142.
 Enmarillecerse, 142.
 Enmelar, 110.
 Enmendar, 110.
 Enmohecer, 142.
 Enmollecer, 142.
 Enmudecer, 142.
 Ennegrecer, 142.

Ennoblecer, 142.
 Ennudecer, 142.
 Enorgullecer, 142.
 Enrarecer, 142.
 Enriquecer, 142.
 Enrobustecer, 142.
 Enrodar, 111.
 Enrojecer, 142.
 Enrojecer, 142.
 Enroñecer, 142.
 Enruinecerse, 142.
 Ensalmorar, 111.
 Ensandecer, 142.
 Ensangrentar, 110.
 Ensoberbecer, 142.
 Ensoñar, 111.
 Ensordecer, 142.
 Entallecer, 142.
 Entender, 119.
 Entenebrecer, 142.
 Enternecer, 142.
 Enterrar, 110.
 Entigrecerse, 142.
 Entontecerse, 142.
 Entorpecer, 142.
 Entorlar, 111.
 Entrededir, 155.
 Entregar, 45.
 Entregger, 129.
 Entrelucir, 145.
 Entremorir, 135.
 Entreoír, 185.
 Entreperecerse, 142.
 Entrepernar, 110.
 Entreponer, 163.
 Entretener, 169.
 Entrever, 191.
 Entristecer, 142.
 Entullecir, 142.
 Entumecer, 143.
 Envejecer, 143.
 Enverdecer, 143.
 Envestir, 137.
 Enviar, 71.
 Envilecer, 143.
 Envolver, 121.
 Enzurdecer, 143.
 -er, 14, 22, 36.
 Equivaler, 189.
 Erigir, 57.
 Erguir, 130.
 Errar, 112.
 Escandecer, 143.
 Escarmentar, 110.
 Escarnecer, 143.
 Esclarecer, 143.
 Escocer, 125, 141.
 Escoger, 55.
 Escolar, 111.

Escribir, 200.
 Esforzar, 111.
 Esparcir, 52.
 Establecer, 143.
 Estar, 72, 93, 98, 107.
 Estar comiendo, 74.
 Estatuir, 147.
 Estregar, 110.
 Estremecer, 143.
 Estreñir, 137.
 Estudiar, 71, note.
 Evanecer, 143.
 Exceptuar, 71.
 Excluir, 147, 201.
 Exigir, 57.
 Eximir, 201.
 Expedir, 137.
 Expeler, 201.
 Expiar, 71.
 Exponer, 163.
 Expresar, 201.
 Extender, 119, 201.
 Extinguir, 61, 201.
 Extraer, 171.

F

Fabricar, 43.
 Fallecer, 143.
 Favorecer, 143.
 Fenecer, 143.
 Ferrar, 110.
 Fijar, 201.
 Florecer, 143.
 Fluir, 147.
 Follar, 111.
 Fortalecer, 143.
 Fortificar, 43.
 Forzar, 111.
 Fragar, 47.
 Fregar, 110.
 Freír, 139, 200, 202.
 Fruncir, 53.

G

Ganzuar, 71.
 Gañir, 65.
 -gar, 40, 44.
 Garantir, 197.
 Gemecer, 143.
 Gemir, 137.
 -ger, 41, 54.
 -gir, 41, 56.
 Gobernar, 110.
 Gozar, 49.
 Granizar, 98, 100.
 Gruir, 147.
 Gruñir, 65.

-guar, 40, 46.
 Guañir, 65.
 Guarecer, 143.
 Guarnecer, 143.
 Guiar, 71.
 -guir, 41, 60.
 -güir, 148.

H

Haber, 20, 98, 99, 107, 169.
 Hablar, 24, 28, 30, 32, 34.
 Hacendar, 110.
 Hacer, 98, 107, 141, 158, 200.
 Hartar, 202.
 Heder, 119.
 Helar, 98, 110.
 Henchir, 41, 67, 137.
 Hender, 119.
 Heñir, 137.
 Herbar, 110.
 Herbecer, 143.
 Herir, 129.
 Herrar, 110.
 Hervir, 124, 129.
 Holgar, 111.
 Hollar, 111.
 Huir, 147.
 Humedecer, 143.

I

-iar, 41.
 Imbuir, 147.
 Impedir, 137.
 Imponer, 163.
 Importar, 98.
 Impimir, 200.
 Improbar, 111.
 Incensar, 110.
 Incluir, 147, 202.
 Incurrir, 202.
 Indisponer, 163.
 Inducir, 157.
 Inferir, 129.
 Infernar, 110.
 Influir, 147.
 Infundir, 202.
 Ingerir, 129, 202.
 Inhestar, 110.
 Injertar, 202.
 Inquirir, 133.
 Inseguir, 137.
 Inscibir, 200.
 Insertar, 202.
 Instituir, 147.
 Instruir, 147.
 Intentar, 110.

Interdecir, 155.
 Interponer, 163.
 Intervenir, 173.
 Introducir, 157.
 Invernarse, 110.
 Invertir, 129, 202.
 Investir, 137.
 -ir, 14, 22, 38.
 Ir, 107, 151, 180.
 Irregular Verbs, Table of,
 194.
 Irse, 182.

J

Jimenzar, 110.
 Jugar, 116.
 Juntar, 202.
 Justificar, 43.
 Juzgar, 45.

L

Langüedecer, 143.
 Lanzar, 48.
 Lavarse, 80, 82.
 Leer, 69.
 Leerse, 85.
 Ligar, 45.
 Limpiar, 71, note.
 Liquefacer, 159.
 Lobreguecer, 143.
 Lucir, 106, 144.
 Luir, 106, 147.

Ll

Llegar, 45.
 -llir, 41, 62.
 Llover, 98, 100, 121.
 Lloviznar, 98.

M

Maldecir, 155, 202.
 Malherir, 129.
 Malquerer, 165, 202.
 Malsonar, 111.
 Maltraer, 171.
 Mancornar, 111.
 Manifestar, 110, 202.
 Manir, 197.
 Mantener, 169.
 Marchitar, 202.
 Mecer, 141.
 Medir, 137.
 Melar, 110.
 Menguarse, 47.
 Mentar, 110.

Mentir, 129.
 Merecer, 143.
 Merendar, 110.
 Moblar, 111.
 Mohecer, 143.
 Moler, 121.
 Morder, 121.
 Morir, 106, 134, 200.
 Mostrar, 111.
 Mover, 105, 120.
 Muir, 147.
 Mullir, 62.
 Muñir, 65.

N

Nacer, 143, 198, 202.
 Navegar, 45.
 Negar, 110.
 Negrecer, 143.
 Nevar, 98, 101, 110.

Ñ

-ñer, 41, 66.
 -ñir, 41.

O

Obedecer, 143.
 Obstruir, 147.
 Obtener, 169.
 Ofrecer, 143.
 Oír, 107, 184.
 Oler, 122.
 Omitir, 202.
 Oponer, 163.
 Oprimir, 202.
 Oscurecer, 143.

P

Pacer, 143, 198.
 Padecer, 143.
 Pagar, 44.
 Palidecer, 143.
 Parecer, 143.
 Pasar, 202.
 Pecar, 43.
 Pedir, 137.
 Pegar, 45.
 Pensar, 105, 108.
 Perder, 105, 118.
 Perecer, 143.
 Permanecer, 143.
 Permitirse, 84.
 Perniquebrar, 110.
 Perseguir, 61, 137.
 Pertenececer, 143.

Pervertir, 129.
 Picar, 43.
 Pimpollecer, 143.
 Placer, 198.
 Plañir, 65.
 Plastecer, 143.
 Plegar, 110.
 Poblarse, 111.
 Poder, 107, 160.
 Podreecer, 143.
 Podrir, 135.
 Poner, 107, 162, 200.
 Poseer, 69, 202.
 Posponer, 163.
 Preconocer, 143.
 Predetir, 155.
 Predisponer, 163.
 Preferir, 129.
 Prelucir, 145.
 Premorir, 135.
 Prender, 200, 202.
 Preponer, 163.
 Presentir, 129.
 Presumir, 202.
 Presuponer, 163.
 Pretender, 119, 202.
 Prevalecer, 143.
 Prevaler, 189.
 Prevenir, 173.
 Prever, 191.
 Probar, 111.
 Producir, 157.
 Proferir, 129.
 Profetizar, 49.
 Promover, 121.
 Propender, 202.
 Proponer, 163.
 Proscribir, 200.
 Proseguir, 61, 137.
 Prostituir, 147.
 Proteger, 55.
 Proveer, 69, 200, 202.
 Provenir, 173.
 Pudrir, 135.

Q

Quebrarse, 110.
 Quererse, 107, 164.
 -quir, 41, 58.

R

Raer, 199.
 Rarefacerse, 159.
 Reagradecer, 143.
 Reaparecer, 143.
 Reapretarse, 110.
 Reaventarse, 110.

Rebendecir, 155.
 Reblandecer, 143.
 Recaer, 177.
 Recalentar, 110.
 Recentar, 110.
 Receñir, 137.
 Recluir, 147, 202.
 Recocer, 125, 141.
 Recoger, 55.
 Recolar, 111.
 Recolegir, 137.
 Recomendar, 110.
 Recompensar, 109.
 Recomponer, 163.
 Reconducir, 157.
 Reconocer, 143.
 Reconstruir, 147.
 Recontar, 111.
 Reconvalecer, 143.
 Reconvenir, 173.
 Recordar, 111.
 Recostar, 111.
 Recreecer, 143.
 Recrudecer, 143.
 Redargüir, 149.
 Redoler, 121.
 Reducir, 157.
 Reelegir, 137.
 Reencomendar, 110.
 Referir, 129.
 Refloreecer, 143.
 Refluir, 147.
 Reforzar, 111.
 Refregar, 110.
 Refreír, 139.
 Regañir, 65.
 Regar, 110.
 Regimentar, 110.
 Regir, 57, 137.
 Regoldar, 111.
 Regruñir, 65.
 Rehacer, 159.
 Rehenchir, 41, 67, 137.
 Reherir, 129.
 Reherrar, 110.
 Rehervir, 129.
 Rehollar, 111.
 Rehuir, 147.
 Rehumedecer, 143.
 Reír, 138.
 Rejuvenecer, 143.
 Relampaguear, 98, 102.
 Relentecer, 143.
 Relucir, 145.
 Remediar, 71, note.
 Remendar, 110.
 Rementir, 129.
 Remolar, 111.
 Remoler, 121.

Remorder, 121.
 Remover, 121.
 Remullir, 63.
 Renacer, 143.
 Rendir, 137.
 Renegar, 110.
 Reñir, 137.
 Repacer, 143.
 Repadecer, 143.
 Repedir, 137.
 Repensar, 110.
 Repetir, 137.
 Replegar, 110.
 Repoblar, 111.
 Repodrir, 135.
 Reponer, 163, 199.
 Reprobar, 111.
 Reproducir, 157.
 Repudrir, 135.
 Requebrar, 110.
 Requerer, 165.
 Requerir, 129.
 Resaber, 167.
 Resalir, 187.
 Resarcir, 53.
 Resegar, 110.
 Resembrar, 110.
 Resentirse, 129.
 Resolver, 121, 200.
 Resollar, 111.
 Resonar, 111.
 Resplandecer, 143.
 Resquebrar, 110.
 Restablecer, 143.
 Restregar, 110.
 Restituir, 147.
 Restriñir, 65.
 Retallecer, 143.
 Retemblar, 110.
 Retener, 169.
 Retentar, 110.
 Reteñir, 137.
 Retiñir, 65.
 Retoñecer, 143.
 Retorcer, 51, 121.
 Retostar, 111.
 Retraer, 171.
 Retribuir, 147.
 Retronar, 111.
 Retrotraer, 171.
 Revejecer, 143.
 Revenirse, 173.
 Reventar, 110.
 Rever, 191.
 Reverdecer, 119.
 Reverter, 119.
 Revestir, 137.
 Revolar, 111.
 Revolcarse, 111.

Revolver, 121.
 Rezar, 49.
 Rivalizar, 49.
 Robustecer, 143.
 Rodar, 111.
 Roer, 199.
 Rogar, 111.
 Romper, 200, 202.
 Rugir, 57.

S

Saber, 107, 166.
 Sacar, 42.
 Salir, 107, 186.
 Salpimentar, 110.
 Salpresar, 202.
 Salpullir, 63.
 Salvar, 202.
 Santiguar, 47.
 Sarmentar, 110.
 Sarpullir, 63.
 Satisfacer, 159.
 Segar, 110.
 Seguir, 61, 137.
 Sembrar, 110.
 Sementar, 110.
 Sentar, 110.
 Sentir, 106, 128.
 Sepultar, 202.
 Ser, 73, 92, 98, 107.
 Ser amado, 94.
 Serrar, 110.
 Servir, 106, 136.
 Simenzar, 110.
 Sobreaguar, 47.
 Sobrecrecer, 143.
 Sobrentender, 119.
 Sobreponer, 163.
 Sobresalir, 187.
 Sobreseñar, 110.
 Sobresolar, 111.
 Sobrevenir, 173.
 Sobreventar, 110.
 Sobrevertirse, 119.
 Sobrevestir, 129.
 Sofreír, 139.
 Solar, 111.
 Soldar, 111.
 Soler, 199.
 Soltar, 111, 202.
 Solver, 121, 200.
 Sollar, 111.
 Somover, 121.
 Sonar, 105, 114.
 Sonreír, 139.
 Sonrodarse, 111.
 Soñar, 111.
 Sorregar, 110.

Sosegar, 110.
 Sostener, 169.
 Soterrar, 110.
 Subarrendar, 110.
 Subdistinguir, 61.
 Subentender, 119.
 Subseguir, 137.
 Subtender, 119.
 Subvenir, 173.
 Subvertir, 129.
 Suceder, 98.
 Sugerir, 129.
 Sujetar, 202.
 Superponer, 163.
 Supervenir, 173.
 Suplicar, 43.
 Suponer, 163.
 Suprimir, 202.
 Surgir, 57.
 Suspendir, 202.
 Sustituir, 147, 202.
 Sustraer, 171.

T

Table of irregular verbs, 194
 Tallecer, 143.
 Tañer, 66.
 Teger, 55.
 Temblar, 110.
 Tender, 119.
 Tener, 107, 168.
 Tentar, 110.
 Teñir, 137, 202.

Tocar, 43.
 Torcer, 51, 121, 202.
 Tostar, 111.
 Traducir, 107, 156.
 Traer 107, 170.
 Trascender, 119.
 Trascolar, 111.
 Trascordarse, 111.
 Trasegar, 110.
 Trasferir, 129.
 Trasfregar, 110.
 Traslucirse, 145.
 Trasoír, 185.
 Trasoñar, 111.
 Trasponer, 163.
 Trostrocicar, 111.
 Trasverter, 119.
 Trasvolar, 111.
 Travesar, 110.
 Trocar, 111.
 Tronar, 98, 111.
 Trepezar, 110.
 Tullir, 63.
 Tumefacerse, 159.

U

-uar, 41, 70.
 -uir, 41, 146.
 Uncir, 53.
 Urgir, 57.
 Usucapir, 200.
 Utilizar, 49.

V

Vaciar, 71.
 Vagar, 45.
 Valer, 107, 188.
 Variar, 71.
 Vencer, 50.
 Venir, 107, 172.
 Ventar, 110.
 Ventear, 98.
 Ver, 107, 190, 200.
 Verbs, Irregular, Table of,
 194.
 Verdecer, 143.
 Verter, 119.
 Vestir, 137.
 Vivir, 38.
 Volar, 111.
 Volcar, 111.
 Volver, 121, 200.

Y

Yacer, 107, 141, 192.
 Yogui, 61.
 Yuxtaponer, 163.

Z

Zabullir, 63.
 Zaherir, 129.
 Zambullir, 63.
 -zar, 40, 48.
 Zurcir, 53.

New Text-Books in German

Keller's First Year in German

Cloth, 12mo. 290 pages \$1.00

Keller's Second Year in German

Cloth, 12mo. 388 pages 1.20

By I. KELLER, Professor of the German Language and Literature in the Normal College, New York.

These two books furnish a systematic and thorough course for beginners in German. They combine the best features of both the grammatical and natural methods of teaching. The lessons in each book afford suitable material for practice in reading, for oral and written exercises and translations, for conversational exercises, and for grammatical study. The student is encouraged from the first to speak and write German as the best and shortest means of gaining an intelligent knowledge and use of the language.

Keller's Bilder aus der Deutschen Litteratur

By I. KELLER, Professor of the German Language and Literature in the Normal College, New York.

Linen, 12mo. 225 pages 75 cents

The plan of this work will commend itself to teachers who believe that the teaching of German literature should concern itself with the contents and meaning of the great works themselves more than with a critical study of what has been said about the works. With this aim the author gives a survey of the language and literature at its most important epochs, selecting for detailed study the chief works of each period and writer. A summary of the contents of each work so treated is given, generally illustrated by a quotation from the work.

The simplicity of the treatment and language fits this work for younger students as well as for those of more advanced grades.

Copies of any of the above books will be sent prepaid to any address, on receipt of the price, by the Publishers :

American Book Company

New York

• Cincinnati •

Chicago

Germania Texts

Edited by A. W. SPANHOOFD

These Texts include important and interesting chapters from the works of the best German authors, and are intended for advanced students in Academies, Colleges, Universities, and German-American schools, who wish to make a thorough study of German Literature. They are issued in pamphlet form at a uniform price of **ten cents**.

The series embraces the following works :

1. Bürgers Lenore. With Sketch of Bürger's Life and Works and Extracts from ERICH SCHMIDT's celebrated essay.
 2. Vergleichung Goethes und Schillers ;
Lessings und Herders. G. G. GERVINUS.
 3. Klopstocks Bedeutung für sein Zeitalter. C. L. CHOLEVIUS.
 4. Reineke Fuchs. H. KURZ.
 5. Die Krönung Josefs II. GOETHE. With Notes.
 6. Lessings Dramaturgie. G. G. GERVINUS.
Lessings Minna von Barnhelm. H. KURZ.
 7. Meier Helmbrecht. Dr. H. KHULL.
 8. Wieland. From GOETHE'S Gedächtnisrede.
 9. Wielands Oberon. H. KURZ.
 10. Schiller's Lied von der Glocke. With Notes. A. W. Spanhoofd.
 11. Matthias Claudius als Volksdichter. W. HERBST.
 12. Schiller's Kraniche des Ibykus and Eleusische Fest. With Notes.
A. W. Spanhoofd.
-

*Copies of any of the Germania Texts will be sent prepaid to any address,
on receipt of the price (10 cents) by the Publishers.*

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

Popular Text-Books in German

By Dr. WILHELM BERNHARDT

Late Director of German Instruction in Washington City High Schools

DEUTSCHES SPRACH- UND LESEBUCH

Part I., Cloth, 12mo, 258 pages \$1.10

Part II., Cloth, 12mo, 300 pages 1.10

Revised Edition, including material for German Prose Composition, tables of Declensions and Conjugations, Suggestions to Teachers, etc.

GERMAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

Cloth, 12mo, 118 pages 75 cents

A complete vocabulary to the Deutsches Sprach- und Lesebuch.

HAUPTFATKA AUS DER GESCHICHTE DER DEUTSCHEN LITERATUR. Cloth, 12mo, 103 pages 75 cents

A brief comparative outline of German Literature.

IM ZWIELICHT. Vol. I. First Readings in German Prose. Vol. II. Intermediate Readings in German Prose.

Cloth, 12mo. Per volume 65 cents

Short stories from Rudolf Baumbach's Märchen and Erzählungen.

FREUDVOLL UND LEIDVOLL

Cloth, 12mo, 125 pages. With Notes 65 cents

A collection of stories from Peschkau, von Wildenbruch, Stökl, Seidel, von Goetzendorff-Grabowski, and Baumbach.

ES WAR EINMAL

Cloth, 12mo, 174 pages 65 cents

Modern fairy tales from the writings of Baumbach and Wildenbruch.

SEIDEL'S LEBERECHEIT HÜHNCHEN UND ANDERE SONDERLINGE

Boards, 12mo, 72 pages. With vocabulary 30 cents

SCHILLER'S GUSTAV ADOLF IN DEUTSCHLAND

Boards, 12mo, 144 pages. With vocabulary 45 cents

DAS MÄDCHEN VON TREPPI, and MARION. Two Novelettes by

PAUL HEYSE. Boards, 12mo, 96 pages 30 cents

Copies of any of these books will be sent, prepaid, to any address on receipt of the price by the Publishers :

American Book Company

NEW YORK . CINCINNATI . CHICAGO
(117)

German

A Brief German Grammar. WITH EXERCISES.

By HJALMAR EDGREN, Ph.D., and LAURENCE FOSSLER, A.M.,
of the University of Nebraska.

Linen, 12mo, 181 pages Price, 75 cents

This brief Grammar is designed for high school and college students, or students of equivalent training. It aims to prepare the way for critical reading and for practice in writing and speaking the language, on the basis of a systematic knowledge of the essentials of German grammar and syntax and the elements of a German vocabulary rationally acquired.

The presentation is thorough, scientific, and practical, and will give the beginner a firm and intelligent grasp of the language at the earliest practicable moment. Following the grammar is a series of carefully graded exercises, sufficient to furnish all the practice needed in reading and writing German until the grammatical study is completed. Special attention is given throughout the book to the important subject of derivations with particular reference to the etymological relations of German and English words. Other special features of the book are the reference lists of all simple verbs deviating from the new or regular conjugations and the treatment of derivatives, sound correspondences, formative elements, etc. The book is made serviceable for the student by a well selected English-German vocabulary and a very complete index.

*Copies of Edgren and Fossler's German Grammar will be sent, prepaid,
to any address on receipt of the price by the Publishers:*

American Book Company

NEW YORK

CINCINNATI

CHICAGO

Modern French Texts

Comprising Selected Stories and Readings, carefully edited and accompanied by adequate explanatory notes and vocabularies. They are designed to be used in connection with the study of French, and as an introduction to general French Literature. The series includes:

Contes et Légendes

By H. A. GUERBER, author of *Myths of Greece and Rome*, etc.

Part I—Linen, 12mo, 183 pages 60 cents

Part II—Linen, 12mo, 192 pages 60 cents

A collection of Fairy Tales and Legends told in such a pleasing way as to awaken the deepest interest and induce pupils to read to the end.

Mairet's *La Tâche du Petit Pierre*

Arranged for Reading Classes by Edith Healy.

Boards, 12mo, 140 pages 35 cents

This charming story appeared in 1887, and its immediate success was so great that it received the honor of coronation by the French Academy.

Nodier's *Le Chien du Brisquet*, and Other Stories

Edited for School Use by L. C. Syms, author of *First, Second, and Third Years in French*. Boards, 12mo, 111 pages 35 cents

A selection of popular French stories by well-known authors, suitable for use in the second or third year of the French course.

L'Abbé Constantin

A Comedy in Three Acts by HECTOR CRÉMIEUX and PIERRE DECOURCELLE. Adapted from the romance of Ludovic Halévy.

Edited for school use by Victor E. François, Instructor in French in the University of Michigan.

Boards, 12mo, 111 pages 35 cents

Dix Contes Nouveaux

Edited, with Notes and Vocabulary, by C. FONTAINE, Director of French and Spanish Instruction in Washington, D. C., High Schools. Boards, 12mo 168 pages 45 cents

A collection of selected tales from the writings of Theuriet, Blacke, Halévy, Rameau, Chotel, Véron, Chênevière, France, Coppée, and Arène.

Racine's *Iphigénie*

Edited by Benjamin Duryea Woodward, B. ès L., Ph.D., of the Department of Romance Languages and Literatures in Columbia University. Cloth, 12mo, 198 pages 60 cents

Copies of the Modern French Texts will be sent prepaid to any address, on receipt of the price by the Publishers:

American Book Company

NEW YORK

CINCINNATI

CHICAGO

Improved Text-Books in French

Syms's First Year in French.	128 pages . . .	\$0.50
Syms's Second Year in French.	303 pages . . .	1.00
Syms's Third Year in French.	314 pages . . .	1.20

BY L. C. SYMS

Bachelier ès Lettres, Licencié en Droit de l'Université de France.

These three books make a complete course in French, designed to train pupils not only to read, but to speak and write the language correctly.

In their preparation the author has aimed to unite two contending systems of teaching languages, one of which is known as the Natural or Conversational Method, the other as the Translation Method.

The First Book is intended for pupils beginning the study, and consists of easy and progressive lessons. In the Second Book the general plan has been so arranged as to give an almost equal space and time to reading, conversation, translation, and grammar. In addition to the study of verbs, the basis of the whole method, special attention is given to all points which may prove to be specially difficult for English-speaking students.

The Third Year in French follows the same plan adopted in the first two books of the series, and with them makes a complete course in French, intended to meet all the requirements of preparatory schools, academies, and colleges. The reading lessons in this book show a marked progression, preparing the student for an intelligent study of the masterpieces of French literature. Selections from French classic and modern poets are given for reading and memorizing. It also contains tables of conjugations and of the principal irregular verbs, vocabularies, etc.

Copies of these books will be sent prepaid to any address, on receipt of the price by the Publishers:

American Book Company

NEW YORK

CINCINNATI

CHICAGO



04025

